



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

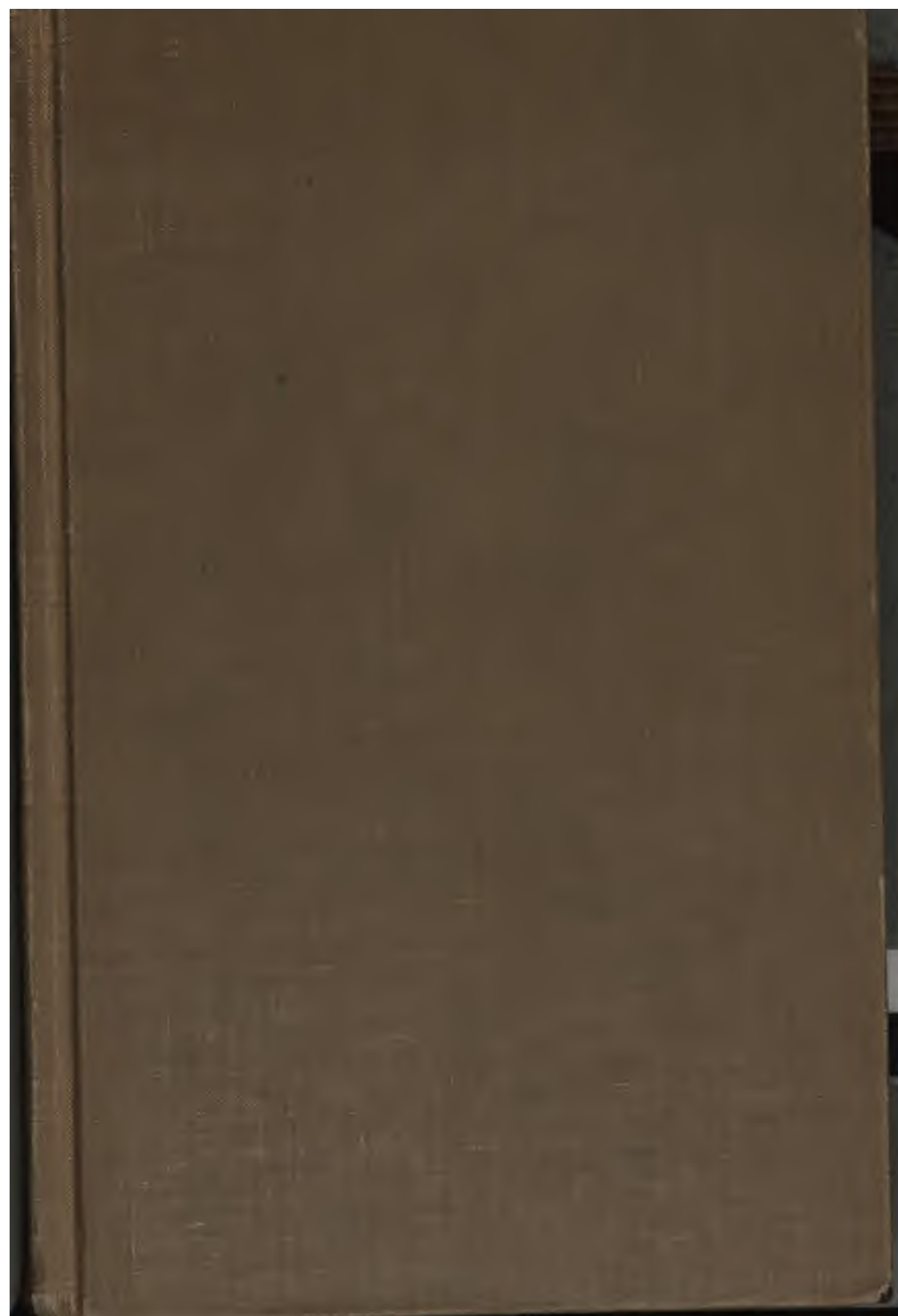
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





—

128784
2-6-

DEKKER'S
DRAMATIC WORKS

THE DRAMATIC WORKS OF
THOMAS DEKKER NOW
FIRST COLLECTED WITH
ILLUSTRATIVE NOTES AND
A MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR
IN FOUR VOLUMES

VOLUME THE FIRST



LONDON
JOHN PEARSON YORK STREET COVENT GARDEN

1873

12

P22.3

D321

vol. 1



A10227

no plate

CONTENTS

VOLUME THE FIRST

MEMOIR OF THOMAS DEKKER
A PLEASANT COMEDIE OF THE GENTLE CRAFT
THE COMEDIE OF OLD FORTUNATUS
SATIRO-MASTIX, OR THE UNTRUSSING OF THE
HUMOROUS POET
THE MAGNIFICENT ENTERTAINMENT GIVEN
TO KING JAMES
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS

VOLUME THE SECOND

THE HONEST WHORE
THE WHORE OF BABYLON
WESTWARD-HOE
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS

*VOLUME THE THIRD***NORTHWARD-HOE****THE FAMOUS HISTORY OF SIR THOMAS WYAT****THE ROARING GIRLE****LONDON TRIUMPHING****IF THIS BE NOT A GOOD PLAY THE DIVELL
IS IN IT****NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS***VOLUME THE FOURTH***THE VIRGIN MARTIR****BRITTANNIA'S HONOR****LONDONS TEMPE****A TRAGI-COMEDY: CALLED MATCH MEE IN
LONDON****THE WONDER OF A KINGDOME****THE SUN'S DARLING****THE WITCH OF EDMONTON****NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.**



Memoir of

THOMAS DEKKER

THOMAS DEKKER was one of those unfortunate poets to whom the Muse is a cruel stepmother. The little that we know of his life suggests a painful and continual struggle with poverty, in which he often succumbed, and from which he never arose victorious. His stores of wisdom and his wealth of imagination were for forty years lavished on the world, but with little or no reward to himself. He wrote continually under the bitter stress of want, and was often compelled to seek friendly aid to release him from the walls of a debtor's prison. A wretched hand-to-mouth existence, a career made sordid by the constant necessity of writing for daily bread, seems to have been his lot from first to last, relieved perhaps by occasional glimpses of happiness and repose, such as he

viii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

must have enjoyed when composing some of the choicest of the long series of dramas which constitute his chief title to fame.

That he was born in the metropolis we may infer from a prose tract of his own, (1) where, apostrophising London, he says,—“O, thou beautifullest daughter of the two united Monarchies! from thy womb received I my being; from thy breasts my nourishment.” The exact date of his birth is uncertain; in a tract dated February, 1637, he speaks of “my three-score years,” (2) but the expression is a vague one, and may mean any age from sixty on towards seventy. Indeed, in the (unique) tract entitled “Warres, Warres, Warres,” of date almost ten years earlier (1628), Dekker had already spoken of himself as an old man; (3) and in the Dedication to his Tragi-

1 *The Seven deadly Sinnes of London* (1606). The passage cited will be found not far from the close of “The Induction to the Booke.”

2 *English Villanies Seven Severall Times Preſt to Death*. In his Dedication of this tract to the Middlesex justices of the Peace, he says:—“I preach without a Pulpit: this is no Sermon, but an Epistle Dedicatory, which dedicates these Discoveries, and my threeſcore yeares devotedly yours in my best service.”

3 “For my heart danceth sprightly, when I see
(*Old as I am*) our English gallantry.”

Comedy, called *Match mee in London* (1631), to Lodowick Carlell, he pathetically says : " I haue beene a Priest in APOLLO'S Temple, many yeares, my voyce is decaying with my Age, yet yours being cleare and aboue mine, shall much honour mee, if you but listen to my old Tunes." (4) This is hardly the language of a man who has only just passed his fiftieth year ; though Dekker, with such a weight of sorrow, if not of years, on his shoulders, might well feel old before his time. (5)

4 Vol. IV., p. 133.

5 It is curious to compare with the above lament the expression of a similar one written at the age of fifty-five (1864) by our greatest living poet :—

" A Dedication.

Dear, near and true—no truer Time himself
Can prove you, though he make you evermore
Dearer and nearer, as the rapid of life
Shoots to the fall—take this and pray that he
Who wrote it, honouring your sweet faith in him,
May trust himself, and after praise and scorn,
As one who feels the immeasurable world,
Attain the wise indifference of the wise ;
And after Autumn past—if left to pass
His autumn into seeming leafless days,
Draw toward the long frost and longest night,
Wearing his wisdom lightly, like the fruit
Which in our winter woodland looks a flower."

x. *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

Another reason for fixing the date of his birth somewhat earlier than the "three-score years" of 1637 would seem to imply, is that his earliest acknowledged publication (6) had already appeared in 1600, and that we hear of him in Henflowe's Diary as a writer for the theatre as early as 1597. (7) We may safely assume him to have been born, therefore, somewhere in the second decade of Elizabeth's reign; not earlier probably than 1570, and certainly not later than 1577.

We learn from the registers of St. Saviour's, Southwark, that the person who probably was Dekker's father, was buried there in 1594; and from the registers of St. Giles, Cripplegate (where Henflowe's and Alleyn's theatre, the Fortune, for which Dekker wrote, was situated), that Thomas Dycker, gent., had a daughter Dorcas christened there on 27th Oct., 1594, and that Thomas Decker, yeoman, had a daughter

6 *The Comedie of Old Fortunatus.*

7 "Lent unto Thomas Dowton, the 8 of Jenewary 1597, twenty shillings, to by a booke of Mr. Dickers. xxs." *Diary of Philip Henflowe*, From 1591 to 1609. *from the Original Manuscript preserved at Dulwich College*, London: Printed for the Shakespeare Society, 1845.

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xi

Anne christened there on 14th Oct., 1602. Neither of these might be our poet, and it was not usual to designate an author "yeoman." Thomas Dekker had a daughter Elizabeth buried there in 1598, and a son of Thomas Dekker was buried at St. Botolph's, Bishopsgate, on 19th April in the same year. The widow of old Thomas Dekker, who died in 1594, was living in Maid Lane, Southwark, near the Globe Theatre, in 1596. (7)

We have said that Dekker began to write for the stage as early as 1597. His first attempts, however, in most of which he seems to have been associated with others, have not been preserved. (8)

7 COLLIER'S *Bibliographical Account of Early English Literature* (Lond. 1865), I, 195.

8 Henslowe records payments to Dekker and Chettle "in earneste of their boocke called Troyelles and credida," on the 7th and 16th April, 1599. On the 2nd May, 1599, a payment of five shillings was made to Dekker "in earneste of a Boocke called orestes fures," a play in which he does not appear to have had any coadjutor. In May, 1599, there are two payments to Dekker and Chettle for "the tragedie of Agamemnone." In July and August, 1599, he is mentioned in connexion with a play called the "stepmothers tragedy," and on 1st August, 1599, he receives forty shillings "for a booke called beare a braine."

xii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

His two earliest extant dramatic productions, *The Shoemaker's Holiday* and *The Comedie of Old Fortunatus* — the first anonymous (9) and

In September, 1599, various payments are made to Dekker, Jonfon, and Chettle, and "another gentleman," on account of a play called "Robert the second, Kinge of Scottes tragedie."

In January, 1599—1600, Dekker receives a payment for a play called *Truth's Supplication to Candlelight*; in the following month payments are made to Dekker, Haughton, and Daye, for the *The Spanish Moor's Tragedy* [by some supposed to be identical with the play entitled *Lust's Dominion*, first printed in 1657, and ascribed to Marlowe]. In March, 1599—1600, Chettle, Dekker, Haughton, and Daye, received payment for a play called *The Seven Wife Masters*. All these pieces appear to have remained in manuscript, and to have perished.

9 The absurdity of attributing this play to Barten Holiday (as in the Library Catalogue of the British Museum, in Lowndes, and elsewhere) must surely have arisen from some blundering binder having lettered one of the later editions "The Shoemakers."—HOLIDAY. The date of the first edition alone should have prevented the perpetuation of such a piece of futility. Barten Holiday was born in 1593, and must have been, indeed, an infant prodigy to have produced such a play as *The Shoemaker's Holiday* at the age of seven. Dekker's authorship of this play is corroborated by the following entry in Henslowe's Diary: — "Lent unto Samewell Rowley and Thomas Dowton, the 15 of Julye, 1599, to bye a Boocke of Thomas Dickers, called the gentle Craft the some of iijl."

the second signed with his name at the end (10) —were published in 1600. With a single exception, to be mentioned presently, he probably never surpassed these earlier works, either in the lighter or the graver strain. *The Shoemaker's Holiday*, both in the scenes of wild fun and buffoonery, and in the tender love-story that runs through it like a silver thread, has all the charm of a Waverley novel, and possesses the very highest interest as an historical picture of manners. Simon Eyre is inimitable: there is no better type of jovial honest merriment in the whole range of English literature. He is as original and well-sustained a character as Falstaff himself. Of the *Comedie of Old Fortunatus*, Hazlitt might well say that it has "the idle garrulity of age, with the freshness and gaiety of youth still upon its cheek and in its heart." The songs in these two pieces are exquisitely beautiful, and the Prologues to

10 *Tho. Dekker*.—The name is thus spelt in all the existing autograph signatures of the poet, and (we believe without exception) in all the original editions of those pieces of which he was the sole author. To this form we have ourselves uniformly adhered. By his contemporaries, by his publishers, and by his critics and annotators, the name of Dekker has been spelt with almost as many variations as that of his illustrious contemporary Shakespeare: —e.g., Decker, Deckers, Dickers, Dekker, Deker, Deckers, Deckar, Dekkar, &c.

xiv *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

both contain some pleasant flattery of Queen Elizabeth, before whom they were performed.

The Comedie of Old Fortunatus received a German dress in the present century. The translator, Dr. Schmidt, makes the following observations on its style and versification :—

“In Beziehung auf die Sprache will ich nur an Eins erinnern. Es ist dies der Gebrauch des Reims, des reimlosen Iambus und der Prosa. Wie in den edleren Naturen Einsicht und höheres Gefühl beständig die Oberhand haben, so schläft in den gemeinem dasselbe in fernster Tiefe, und giebt kein Zeichen. Aber wenn von aussen die Stimme des Höchsten donnert in plötzlich überraschendem Segen oder Verderben, da entbrennt auch bei diesen der göttliche Funken, und bricht hervor mit ungeahndeter Kraft, in treffendem Wort. So finden wir bei Shakspeare und Decker den Reim als Organ jener höchsten Lebensblitze, die reimlosen Iamben für alle anderen unendlich mannigfachen Gemüthszustände, bis zu dem gewöhnlichen gleichgültigen hinab, wo der Mensch sich gehn läßt, da tritt die Prosa ein, und ist recht eigentlich zu Hause in den scherzhaften Massen. Denn die in demselben abgespiegelte Kehrseite des Lebens kann nur erfreulich und bedeutend sein, wenn unbewußt dahinter wie im Traume der Ernst als Folie liegt, und nicht hervortritt mit seinem gewichtigen, gemessenen Wort. Dieses so natürliche Verhältniß zwischen der Sprache und dem Wesen des Dinges hat gewiß auch seinen Theil an dem unergründlichen Wohlgefallen, mit welchem wir die Shakspeare'schen Erzeugnisse genießen. In unserm Drama spricht der nichtige Schatten nur den einzigen Vers

‘Doch Herr, daß es nicht ende jämmerlich !’

In dem Augenblick ist er (ohne es zu wissen) und daran zu glauben, wirklicher Profet, wie Lichtenberg versichert, daß der gewöhnlichste Mensch wenigstens drei Mal im Jahr einen genialen Augenblick habe. Fortuna, Tugend, Lafter, Ampedo, Orleans, dagegen kommen in ihrer Feierlichkeit niemals heraus aus den künstlich gemessenen Worten." (11)

His next published play was *Satiro-mastix, or The untrussing of the Humorous Poet*. As a personal satire of considerable pungency directed against the supposed arrogant pretensions of Ben Jonson, it seems to have enjoyed great popularity. In reading it now, more than two centuries after the grave has closed over both the combatants, it is impossible to suppress a feeling of sorrowful wonder that two men so gifted should have prostituted their genius to the expression of such narrow jealousies and hatreds.

11 *Fortunatus und seine Söhne, eine Zauber-Tragödie von Thomas Decker. Aufgeführt im Jahr 1600 vor der Königin Elisabeth. Aus dem Englischen von Dr. Fr. Wilh. Val. Schmidt, &c. Mit einem Anhang ähnlicher Märchen dieses Kreises, und einer Abhandlung über die Geschichte von Fortunatus.* Berlin, 1819. A German edition (English text) of *The Shoemaker's Holiday* appeared a few years ago, with some interesting notes. The title is as follows:—" *The Shoemaker's Holiday, or The Gentle Craft. Nach einem Drucke aus dem Jahre 1618 neu herausgegeben von Hermann Friscke Lehrer am Gymnasium zu Thorn, 1862.*" Pp. 67.

xvi *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

“ Ah God ! the petty fools of rhyme
That shriek and sweat in pigmy wars
Before the stony face of Time,
And look'd at by the silent stars :
That strain to make an inch of room
For their sweet felves, and cannot hear
The fullen Lethe rolling doom
On them and theirs and all things here.”

That Dekker received provocation no one will deny. Unworthy personalities had been directed against him by his brother poet and former collaborator.⁽¹²⁾ The *Poetaster* had been flung like a fire-brand among the wits and witlings, among the poets and the smaller fry who only aspired to that name. Dekker was chosen as the champion of all these, and acquitted himself of the

12 “On p. 155 of ‘Henflowe’s Diary,’ occurs the following entry :—

‘Lent unto W^m Borne, alles birde, the 10 of auguste 1529, to lend unto Bengemyne Johnstone, and thomas Dekkers, in earneste of ther booke they are writtinge, called pagge of plimoth, the some xxxs.’

This tragedy was founded upon an event of comparatively recent occurrence. The play has been lost, but the story has come down to us. The event happened in February, 1591, and it appears that Ben Jonson and Dekker had finished their tragedy in September, 1599, when the last payment of £6 was made to them.”—*Shakespeare Society’s Papers*, vol. II. (1845), p. 79.

office in a most effective manner. The elder Disraeli in his *Quarrels of Authors* has given the following account of the business, which we quote as containing some just and careful criticism :

“ This quarrel is a splendid instance how genius of the first order, lavishing its satirical powers on a number of contemporaries, may discover among the crowd, some individual who may return with a right aim the weapon he has himself used, and who will not want for encouragement to attack the common assailant : the greater genius is thus mortified by a victory conceded to the inferior, which he himself had taught the meaner one to obtain over him.

One of the ‘ screaming grasshoppers held by the wings,’ boldly turned on the holder with a scorpion’s bite ; and Dekker, who had been lashed in *The Poetaster*, produced his *Satiromastix, or the untrussing of the humorous Poet*. Dekker was a subordinate author, indeed ; but, what must have been very galling to Jonson, who was the aggressor, indignation proved such an inspirer, that Dekker seemed to have caught some portion of Jonson’s own genius, who had the art of making even Dekker popular ; while he discovered that his own laurel-wreath had been dextrously changed by the *Satiromastix* into a garland of ‘ stinging nettles.’

In *The Poetaster* Crispinus is the picture of one of those impertinent fellows who resolve to become Poets, having an equal aptitude to become anything that is in fashionable request. When Hermogenes, the finest singer in Rome, refused to sing, *Crispinus* gladly seizes the occasion, and whispers the lady near him—‘ Entreat the ladies to entreat me to sing, I beseech you.’ This character is

xviii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

marked by a ludicrous peculiarity which turning on an individual characteristic, must have assisted the audience in the true application. It is probable that Dekker had some remarkable head of hair, and that his locks hung not like 'the curls of Hyperion;' (13) for the jeweller's wife admiring among the company, the persons of Ovid, Tibullus, &c., *Crispinus* acquaints her that they were poets, and since she admires them, promises to become a poet himself. The simple lady further inquires, 'if when he is a poet his looks will change? and particularly if his hair will change, and be like those gentlemen's?' 'A man,' observes *Crispinus*, 'may be a poet, and yet not change his hair.' 'Well!' exclaims the simple jeweller's wife, 'we shall see your cunning; yet if you can change your hair, I pray do it.'

The *Satiromastix* may be considered as a parody on *The Poetaster*. Jonson, with classical taste, had raised his scene in the court of Augustus: Dekker, with great unhappiness, places his in that of William Rufus. The interest of the piece arises from the dexterity with which Dekker has accommodated those very characters which Jonson has satirised in his *Poetaster*. This gratified those who came every day to the theatre, delighted to take this mimetic revenge on the Arch Bard. . . . Some censured Dekker for barrenness of invention, in bringing on those characters in his own play whom Jonson had stigmatised; but 'it was not improper,' he says, 'to set the same dog

(13) If the rude woodcut on the title-page of *Dekker's Dream* be meant, as seems likely, for the *vera effigies* of our poet, it corroborates the above observation; for he is there represented with very shaggy locks indeed.

upon Horace, whom Horace had set to worry others.' Dekker warmly concludes his spirited prefatory address 'To the World' with defying the Jonsonian.

In Dekker's *Satiromastix* Horace junior is first exhibited in his study, rehearsing to himself an Ode: suddenly the Pindaric rapture is interrupted by the want of a rhyme; this is fatirically applied to an unlucky line of Ben Jonson's own. One of his *sons*, Afinius Bubo, who is blindly worshipping his great idol, or his *Ningle*, as he calls him, amid his admiration of Horace, perpetually breaks out into digressive accounts of what sort of a man his friends take him to be. For one Horace in wrath prepares an epigram; and for *Crispinus* and *Fannius*, brother bards, who threaten 'they'll bring your life and death on the stage, as a bricklayer in a play,' he says, 'I can bring a prepared troop of gallants, who, for my sake, shall distaste every unsalted line in their fly-blown comedies.' 'Ay,' replies Afinius, 'and all men of my rank?' *Crispinus* Horace calls 'a light voluptuous reveller,' and *Fannius* 'the slightest cobweb-lawn piece of a poet.' Both enter, and Horace receives them with all friendship. The scene is here conducted not without skill. To the complaints of the querulous fatirist, *Crispinus* replies with dignified gravity, at which the galled Horace winces. *Fannius* too joins, and shows Ben the absurd oaths he takes, when he swears to all parties that he does not mean them. Horace is awkwardly placed between these two friendly remonstrants, to whom he promises perpetual love.

Captain Tucca, a dramatic personage in Jonson's *Poetaster*, and a copy of his own Bobadil, is here continued with the same spirit; and as that character permitted from the extravagance of its ribaldry, it is now

xx *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

made the vehicle for those more personal retorts, exhibiting the secret history of Ben, which perhaps twitted the great bard more than the keenest wit, or the most solemn admonition which Dekker could ever attain. Jonson had cruelly touched on Dekker being out at elbows, and made himself too merry with the histrionic tribe: he who was himself a poet, and had been a Thespian!

The greatness of Ben's genius is by no means denied by his rivals; and Dekker makes *Fannius* reply with noble feelings, and in an elevated strain of poetry."

In the following year (1603) a play was published anonymously, of which Dekker is supposed to have written the principal portion, his assistants being Haughton and Chettle. This is entitled *The Comodie of Patient Grisfil* (14). From internal evidence there is little doubt that he had a share in it; though, as the printed copy is entirely silent as to the authorship, which only rests on some vague entries in Henslowe's Diary, (15) this play has not been

14 *The Pleasant Comodie of Patient Grisfill. As it hath bene sundrie times lately plaied by the right honorable the Earle of Nottingham (Lord high Admirall) his seruants.* London. Imprinted for Henry Rocket, and are to be solde at the long Shop vnder S. Mildreds Church in the Poultry. 1603.

15 December 19th 1599, and again 26th Dec. payments were made to Dekker, Chettle and Haughton, and on 28th Dec. a separate payment to Dekker.

xxii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

Sleepe pretty wantons doe not cry,
And I will sing a lullabie,
Rocke them rocke them lullabie.

In 1604 appeared the first part of that beautiful play which most critics have agreed in considering as Dekker's masterpiece. As Mr. Swinburne has said in regard to one of the finest plays of Ford, "it is somewhat unfortunate that its very title should sound so strangely in the ears of a generation whose ears are the chafest part about them." (16) Although the name of Dekker stands alone on the title-page of all the editions of *The Honest Whore*, an entry in Henflowe's Diary, corroborated by some internal evidence, would seem to imply that in the composition of at any rate the first part of the play he received some aid from Thomas Middleton, with whom he is known to have written conjointly on two other occasions. Mr. Dyce has accordingly assumed a joint author-

16 *Fortnightly Review*, July, 1871, p. 43. By the bye, it is curious and worthy of mention, as indicative of a contemplated change of title afterwards abandoned, that sheet E of the singularly correct and interesting edition of 1605, has the head-line of *The Converted Courtizan* throughout.

ship in both parts, and has included them in his edition of Middleton's works, though he admits that that writer's share in the play was probably insignificant. (17)

Considering, however, that the year before, when Middleton contributed a speech of only sixty lines to his *Magnificent Entertainment given to King James*, (1603) Dekker had gone out of his way to acknowledge the obligation, (18) I should be inclined to think the aid given in the present case was of a very limited character, and was probably confined to a few suggestions on the general conduct and groundwork of the play; that at any rate it did not extend far enough to cast a doubt on Dekker's creation and authorship of those beautiful scenes and characters of which Hazlitt has spoken

17 "Of *The Roaring Girl*, I believe that Middleton wrote by far the greater portion; but of the two other plays which he produced in conjunction with Dekker—the First and Second Parts of *The Honest Whore*—I have no doubt that his share is comparatively small."—Dyce's *Account of Middleton and his Works*, Lond. 1840 (Vol. I., lvi.).

18 "If there be any glorie to be won by writing these lynes, I doe freebie bestow it (as his due) on *Tho. Middleton*, in whose braine they were begotten, though they were deliuered here: *Quæ nos non fecimus ipsi, vix ea nostra voco.*"—p. 321.

xxiv *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

with so much enthusiasm. I am most anxious to establish this point in the reader's mind, more especially because in the plays which Dekker afterwards avowedly wrote in conjunction with Webster, Middleton, Massinger, and Ford, it has been the fashion from the time of Langbaine down to that of Gifford and Dyce, to attribute to him all the coarse and careless scenes, and to assign all the tender and poetical passages to his collaborators, and thus to rob him of some of his chief claims to our consideration as a dramatic writer.(19)

The Second part of *The Honest Whore* does

19 "Thomas Dekker," says old Gerard Langbaine, "was more famous for the contention he had with Ben Jonson for the Bays, than for any great Reputation he had gained by his own Writings. Yet even in that age, he wanted not his Admirers nor his Friends amongst the Poets: in which number I reckon the Ingenious Mr. Richard Brome; who always styled him by the title of Father. He clubb'd with Webster in writing Three Plays; and with Rowley and Ford in another: and I think I may venture to say, that these Plays as far exceed those of his own Brain, as a platted Whipcord exceeds a single Thread in strength. Of those which he writ alone I know none of much esteem, except *The Untrussing of the Humorous Poet*, and that chiefly on account of the Subject of it, which was the witty Ben Jonson. Of *Fortunatus* I can give no other account than that I once barely saw it, and

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxv

not seem to have been printed until 1630; (20) at any rate no earlier edition is known to exist. As, however, the two plays succeed each other in proper and natural sequence, we have departed in this instance from our otherwise uniform chronological order of arrangement.

Of *The Honest Whore* Hazlitt, in his *Lectures on the Dramatic Literature of the Age of Elizabeth*, writes in the following terms:—

“ Old honest Dekker’s Signior Orlando Friscobaldo I shall never forget ! I became only of late acquainted with

(that it) is printed in quarto.”—GERARD LANGBAIN: *Account of the English Dramatick Poets*, Oxford, 1691, p. 121.

What are we to think of the *value* of a man’s criticism who pronounces so sweeping a judgment on works that he admits he has never read.

20 The text is very corrupt, as is also that of the later editions of the first part. Into the first edition of this (1604) some serious errors had crept, which were corrected in the excellent edition of 1605 (one of the most immaculate of Elizabethan plays in regard to accuracy of printing, and evidently superintended by the author himself). The later editions, however, repeated all the errors of the first, and gathered a good many more by the way (especially that of 1635). Mr. Dyce was the first to point out the existence and peculiarities of the edition of 1605, which appears to be of extraordinary rarity. It has, of course, formed the basis of our own text.

xxvi *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

this last-mentioned worthy character ; but the bargain between us is, I trust, for life. We sometimes regret that we had not sooner met with characters like this, that seem to raise, revive, and give a new zest to our being. . . . The execution is, throughout, as exact as the conception is new and masterly. There is the least colour possible used ; the pencil drags ; the canvas is almost seen through : but then, what precision of outline, what truth and purity of tone, what firmness of hand, what marking of character ! The words and answers all along are so true and pertinent, that we seem to see the gestures, and to hear the tone with which they are accompanied. So when Orlando, disguised, says to his daughter, 'You'll forgive me,' and she replies, 'I am not marble, I forgive you ;' or again, when she introduces him to her husband, saying simply, 'It is my father,' there needs no stage-direction to supply the relenting tones of voice or cordial frankness of manner with which these words are spoken. It is as if there were some fine art to chisel thought, and to embody the inmost movements of the mind in every-day actions and familiar speech. Simplicity and extravagance of style, homeliness and quaintness, tragedy and comedy, interchangeably set their hands and seals to this admirable production. We find the simplicity of prose with the graces of poetry. (The stalk grows out of the ground ; but the flowers spread their flaunting leaves in the air.) The mixture of levity in the chief character bespeaks the bitterness from which it seeks relief ; it is the idle echo of fixed despair, jealous of observation or pity. 'The farcasm quivers on the lip, while the tear stands congealed on the eyelid.) This 'tough senior,' this impracticable old gentleman, softens into a little child ; this choke-pear melts in the mouth like marmalade. In spite of his resolute pro-

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxvii

essions of misanthropy, he watches over his daughter with kindly solicitude ; plays the careful housewife ; broods over her lifeless hopes ; nurses the decay of her husband's fortune, as he had supported her tottering infancy ; saves the high-flying Mattheo from the gallows more than once, and is twice a father to them. The story has all the romance of private life, all the pathos of bearing up against silent grief, all the tenderness of concealed affection : there is much sorrow patiently borne, and then comes peace. Bellafront, in the two parts of this play taken together, is a most interesting character. It is an extreme, and I am afraid almost an ideal case. She gives the play its title, turns out a true penitent, that is, a practical one, and is the model of an exemplary wife. The change of her relative position, with regard to Hippolito, who, in the first part, in the sanguine enthusiasm of youthful generosity, has reclaimed her from vice, and in the second part, his own faith and love of virtue having been impaired with the progress of years, tries in vain to lure her back again to her former follies, has an effect the most striking and beautiful. The pleadings on both sides, for and against female faith and constancy are managed with great polemical skill, assisted by the grace and vividness of poetical illustration. As an instance of the manner in which Bellafront speaks of the miseries of her former situation, I might give the lines in which she contrasts the different regard shewn to the modest or the abandoned of her sex. . . . Perhaps this sort of appeal to matter of fact and popular opinion, is more convincing than the scholastic subtleties of the Lady in Comus. The manner too in which Infelice, the wife of Hippolito, is made acquainted with her husband's infidelity, is finely dramatic ; and in the scene where she convicts him of his injustice, by taxing

xxviii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

herself with incontinence first, and then turning his most galling reproaches to her into upbraidings against his own conduct, she acquits herself with infinite spirit and address. The contrivance by which, in the first part, after being supposed dead, she is restored to life, and married to Hippolito, though perhaps a little far-fetched, is affecting and romantic. There is uncommon beauty in the Duke her father's description of her sudden illness. Candido, the good-natured man of this play, is a character of inconceivable quaintness and simplicity. His patience and good-humour cannot be disturbed by anything. The idea (for it is nothing but an idea) is a droll one, and is well supported. The sudden turn of the character of Candido, on his second marriage, is, however, as amusing as it is unexpected.

"Matheo, the 'high-flying' husband of Bellafront, is a masterly portrait, done with equal ease and effect. He is a person almost without virtue or vice, that is, he is in strictness without any moral principle at all. He has no malice against others, and no concern for himself. He is gay, profligate, and unfeeling, governed entirely by the impulse of the moment, and utterly reckless of consequences. His exclamation, when he gets a new suit of velvet, or a lucky run on the dice, 'Do we not fly high,' is an answer to all arguments. Punishment or advice has no more effect upon him, than upon the moth that flies into the candle. He is only to be left to his fate. Orlando saves him from it, as we do the moth, by snatching it out of the flame, throwing it out of the window, and shutting down the casement upon it."

In comparing the genius of Dekker and Webster, he adds :—

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxix

"Dekker has, I think, more truth of character, more instinctive depth of sentiment, more of the unconscious simplicity of nature. He excels in giving expression to certain habitual, deeply-rooted feelings, which remain pretty much the same in all circumstances, the simple uncompounded elements of nature and passion."

The Whore of Babylon, which followed in 1607, is perhaps the worst and least interesting of Dekker's dramatic pieces. The allegory is without fitness or beauty, the introduction of Queen Elizabeth, under the name of Titania, is clumsily managed; the personification of Time, Truth, and Plain-dealing is equally so. There is no dramatic unity or interest, no insight into character, no beauty of dialogue. The speeches are either bald and prosaic, or swell into turgid bombast. The introduction of the Spanish Armada is at once heavy and ridiculous. That this dull effusion of loyalty may have given pleasure at the time, is likely enough; but no one will read it now except for the sake of its antiquarian interest. The only scenes in any way relieved from the general insipidity are those in which Plain-dealing describes to Truth the fashions of the city; and here and there throughout the play one comes on a line or two of poetry flashing out for a moment in the darkness.

In the same year (1607) appeared the three

xxx *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

plays written conjointly by Dekker and Webster, viz., *Westward Hoe*, *Northward Hoe*, and *Sir Thomas Wyatt*. The first two have little to distinguish them from the ordinary comedies of the time; and the latter, whatever merit it may have possessed in its original form, has been so mutilated by the transcriber or by the printer as to possess scarcely any value.

In his next dramatic production, *The Roaring Girl* (1611), Dekker was associated with Middleton, who, as we have seen, in the opinion of Mr. Dyce, wrote the larger share of this play. Middleton's name is printed first on the title-page, if that be any criterion, and the Preface is signed by him: it is certain, however, that there are many places where the hand of Dekker may clearly be recognised.

In 1612 Dekker was employed to write the Mayoralty Pageant, which he entitled *Troia Nova Triumphans: London Triumphant*. In the same year appeared his play entitled *If it be not good, the Devil is in it*; to which much the same remarks apply as we have already made respecting *The Whore of Babylon*. The beginning of this play (observes Langbaine) seems to be written in imitation of Machiavel's novel, *Belphegor*, where Pluto summons the devils to council.

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxxi

From 1613 to 1616 we learn, on the authority of Oldys, that Dekker was in King's Bench Prison. In connexion with this circumstance, an interesting letter has been preserved in the archives of Dulwich College. Mr. Payne Collier, in his "*Memoirs of Alleyn*," writes as follows :—

"By the autumn of 1616, the construction of Dulwich College, which Alleyn named "*The College of God's gift*," must have been considerably advanced, and ready for the reception of some of the objects of the founder's bounty. At this date Alleyn received a letter from one of Shakespeare's most popular and distinguished contemporaries,—Thomas Dekker. He was a playwright of great celebrity some years before the death of Queen Elizabeth, and had written most of his pieces for companies with which Alleyn and Henflowe were connected. Like many of his class, he seems to have been a man of careless habits, as regarded his pecuniary affairs, living from hand to mouth, by turns affluent and needy, and supplying his pressing wants by the produce of his prolific pen. At the date of the following communication he was a prisoner in the King's Bench ; and it was, no doubt, intended to induce Alleyn to make him a present in return for some enclosed verses "*in praise of charity*," and in celebration of the benevolent work which was now approaching completion. The verses themselves have not survived, but the letter containing them has :—

"To my worthy and worll. freind Edw. Allin Esquier,
at his house at Dullidge.

"Sr

"Out of that respect wch I ever caryed to yo^r
Worth (now heightned by a Pillar of yo^r owne erecting)

xxxii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

doe I fend theis poore testimonies of a more rich Affection. I am glad (yf I bee the First) that I am the first to Consecrate to Memory (yf at least you so embrace it) So noble and pious a Work, as This, yo^r last and worthiest is. A passionate desire of expressing gladnes to See Goodnes so well delivered having bin long in labour in the world made mee thus far to venture. And it best becomes mee to Sing any thing in praise of Charity, because, albeit I have felt few handes warme thorough that complexion, yett imprisonment may make me long for them. Yf any thing in my Eulogium (or Praise) of you and yo^r noble Act bee offensive, lett it be excused because I live amongst the Gothes and Vandalls, where Barbarousnes is predominant. Accept my will howsoever And mee

“ Ready to doe you any service

“ THO. DEKKER.

“ King’s Bench Sept. 12. 1616.”

It is to be regretted that Dekker’s tribute to Alleyn has shared the fate of many things he and his contemporaries composed. Few things in the long and honourable annals of Dulwich College would possess greater interest. We need entertain little doubt that Alleyn took steps to relieve his old friend’s necessities; and as it is stated that Dekker was released from prison in the very year his letter bears date, it may not be too much to suppose that Alleyn had a hand in his liberation. (21)

21 *Memoirs of Edward Alleyn, Founder of Dulwich*

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxxiii

A subsequent undated letter from Dekker to Alleyn, existing among the papers at Dulwich, may here be added :—

“Sr.

“I give you thanks for the last remembrance of your love. I write nowe, not poetically, but as an orrator, not by waye of declamation, but by petition, that you would be pleased, upon my lovinge lynes, to receave a yong man (sonn to a wortheie yeoman of Kent here prisoner) able by his owne meanes to mayntayne himselfe, whose fortunes will answere itt. Hee is a yonge man lovinge you, beinge of your name, and desires no greater happines than to depend upon [you]. You shall doe mee much honor if you thinke him fitt to serve you as a servant, and him much love, because of your name, to receave. The yonge man is of good parts, both of bodie and mynd. I knowe you respect such a one, and I would not (upon that reputation I hold with you) offer a servant to bee unworthie of your attendance. If you please to receave him upon my commendation and your owne tryall, I shall thinck my telfe beholden to you, and you, as I hope, no waye repent the receavinge of such a servant of your owne name. Soe I rest

“Your lovinge freind

“THO. DEKKER.”

When Dekker before made an appeal to

College, including some new Particulars respecting Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, Massinger, Marston, Dekker, &c. By J. Payne Collier, F.S.A. Lond. Printed for the Shakespeare Society, 1841, pp. 130—132.

xxxiv *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

Alleyn's known liberality, and sent him some laudatory verses, he was in confinement in the King's Bench, and we see that he was again a prisoner when he introduced a young man to Alleyn's notice as a servant. The expression, "I give you thanks for the last remembrance of your love," warrants the conclusion that Alleyn had sent pecuniary assistance to Dekker on more than one previous occasion. Respecting the date of the letter, we can give no information, and the back of the sheet having been torn off, the address has been lost; but, considering its contents and the place where it was found, there can be no doubt at all on the latter point. (22).

After his release from prison, Dekker appears to have been occupied with some of his innumerable prose pamphlets. His name is not connected with any new play until 1622, when *The Virgin-Martyr*, written conjointly with Massinger, appeared. Gifford has endeavoured to claim for Massinger nearly all the serious passages of this play, and to fasten on Dekker the stigma of having contributed all the coarser scenes. Other critics have judged very differently. The reader shall hear both sides of the question, and form his own opinion.

(22) *Memoirs of Alleyn*, pp. 185, 186.

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxxv

"It should be observed," says Gifford, "in justice to our old plays, that few or rather none of them, are contaminated with such detestable ribaldry as the present one. To "low wit," or indeed to wit of any kind, it has not the slightest pretension; being, in fact, nothing more than a loathsome footerkin engendered of filth and dulness. It was evidently the author's design to personify *Lust* and *Drunkenness* in the characters of Hircius and Spungius, and this may account for the ribaldry in which they indulge. That Massinger is not free from dialogues of low wit and buffoonery (though certainly he is much more so than his contemporaries) may readily be granted; but the person who, after perusing this execrable trash, can imagine it to bear any resemblance to his style and manner, must have read him to very little purpose. It was assuredly written by Dekker, as was the rest of this act, in which there is much to approve.

On the passage beginning—

DOR. *My booke and taper* (vol. iv. p. 26),

he observes :—

"What follows, to the end of the scene, is exquisitely beautiful. What pity that a man so capable of interesting our best passions (for I am persuaded that this also was written by Dekker) should prostitute his genius and his judgment to the production of what could only disgrace himself, and disgust his reader.

And he concludes :—

"With a neglect of precision which pervades all the arguments of Mr. Monck Mason, he declares it is easy to distinguish the hand of Dekker from that of Massinger,

xxxvi *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

yet finds a difficulty in appropriating their most characteristic language. . . . With respect to the scenes between the two buffoons, it would be an injury to the name of Massinger to waste a single argument in proving them not to be his. In saying this I am actuated by no hostility to Dekker, who in this Play has many passages which evince that he wanted not talents to rival, if he had pleased, his friend and associate."

To this Mr. Kingsley rejoins:—

"Every pains has been taken to prove that the indecent scenes in the play were not written by Massinger, but by Dekker: on what grounds we know not. We are aware of no canons of internal criticism which will enable us to decide, as boldly as Mr. Gifford does, that all the indecency is Dekker's, and all the poetry Massinger's."(23)

A recent writer on the "Minor Elizabethan Dramatists," observes:—

"To prove how much finer, in its essence, his genius was than the genius of so eminent a dramatist as Massinger, we only need to compare Massinger's portions of the play of *The Virgin Martyr* with Dekker's. The scene between Dorothea and Angelo, in which she recounts her first meeting with him as a "sweet-faced beggar-boy," and the scene in which Angelo brings to Theophilus the basket of fruit and flowers which Dorothea has plucked in Paradise, are inexpressibly beautiful in their exquisite

23 CHARLES KINGSLEY: *Plays and Puritans*. (Miscellanies, 1859, vol. ii. p. 114.)

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxxvii

subtlety of imagination and artless elevation of sentiment." (24)

But a still better and earlier authority has settled the question. In his *Specimens of the Elizabethan Dramatists*, Charles Lamb extracts the scene between Angelo and Dorothea, and says :

"This scene has beauties of so very high an order that, with all my respect for Massinger, I do not think he had poetical enthusiasm capable of furnishing them. His associate Dekker, who wrote *Old Fortunatus*, had poetry enough for anything. The very impurities which obtrude themselves among the sweet pieties of this play have a strength of contrast, a raciness, and a glow in them, which are above Massinger. They set off the religion of the rest."

In 1628 and 1629 Dekker was, for two successive years employed to write the Mayoralty Pageants *Britannia's Honor* and *London's Tempe* are the rarest, though certainly far from the best of his pieces. In 1631 appeared the *Tragi-Comedy called, Match mee in London*, the plot of which is thus sketched in Geneste's *History of the Stage* :—

"Tormiella is the daughter of Malevento—her father had promised her to Gazetto—she elopes from Cordova with Cordolente—they are married—he is a citizen and

xxxviii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

shopkeeper of Seville—Malevento and Gazetto follow them to Seville—the King's Procurefs tells him of Tormiella—he vifits her in difguife, and falls in love with her—he fends for her to court, and makes her one of the Queen's attendants—the Queen is offended and jealous of Tormiella—the King endeavours to debauch Tormiella—fhe continues firm in her attachment to her husband—at the conclufion, the King reftores her to Cordolente, and is reconciled to the Queen. There is an underplot—Don John, the King's brother, wants to obtain the crown—in the laft fcene he renounces his ambitious views, and gains the King's pardon. The title feems to be a challenge to match Tormiella in London, if one can—the King concludes the play with faying that Tormiella has no parallel."

In 1632 Dekker prefixed fome commendatory verfes to Richard Brome's comedy of *The Northern Laffe*.

TO MY SONNE BROME AND HIS LASSE.

Which, then of Both fhall I commend ?
Or Thee (that art my Sonne and Friend)
Or Her, by Thee begot ? A Girle
Twice worth the Cleopatrian Pearle.
No : 'tis not fit for Me to Grace
Thee, who art Mine ; and to thy Face.
Yet I could fay, the merriest Mayd
Among the Nine, for Thee has layd
A Ghyrlond by ; and Iieres to fee
Pied Ideots teare the Daphnean Tree ;
Putting their Eyes out with thofe Boughes
With which Shee bids me deck thy Browes.

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xxxix

But what I bring shall crowne thy Daughter
(My grand child) who (though full of laughter)
Is Chast and Witty to the Time ;
Not Lumpish Cold, as is her Clime
By Phœbus Lyre, Thy Northern Lasse
Our Southern proudest Beauties passe :
 Be Iouiall with thy Braynes (her mother)
And helpe her (Dick) to fuch Another.

THO. DEKKER.

Of *The Wonder of a Kingdom*, published in 1636, the German critic⁽²⁵⁾ already quoted speaks as follows :

“Das gewaltige Jugendfeuer, welches den Fortunatus durch-dringt, ist in diesem Drama erloschen. Beständiger Mangel an den ersten Bedürfnissen des Lebens, Neid seiner Feinde, vielleicht eigene Schwäche und Sünde verbunden mit dem Alter, scheinen die Kraft des so viel versprechenden Mannes gebrochen zu haben. Mit Wehmuth erinnern wir uns bei dieser Gelegenheit der Worte ienes Dichters :

“Nicht blofs erbleichen junge Rosenwangen,
Dem Geist auch droht's, daß er sich überlebe !”

Hazlitt, however, speaks of the character of Iacomo Gentili in this play as “that truly ideal character of a magnificent patron.”

The two remaining plays of Dekker, written in conjunction with Ford—*The Sun's Darling*

25 Dr. Schmidt, *ubi supra*.

xl *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

and *The Witch of Edmonton*—were not published until some years after his death—the former in 1656, and the latter in 1658.

Of *The Sun's Darling* Gifford writes as follows :—

“ I know not on what authority Langbaine speaks [we have seen in another case on what a slender one] ; but he expressly attributes the greater part of this moral masque to Ford. As far as concerns the last two acts, I agree with him ; and a long and clear examination of this poet's manner enables me to speak with some degree of confidence. But I trace Dekker perpetually in the other three acts, and through the whole of the comic part. I think well of this poet, and should pause before I admitted the inferiority of his genius—as far, at least, as imagination is concerned—to that of Ford : but his rough vigour and his irregular metre generally enable us to mark the line between him and his more harmonious coadjutor.”

He remarks thus on *The Witch of Edmonton* :—

“ It is very easy to sneer at the supernatural portions of this play—which I consider creditable to the talents and feelings of both poets. I believe in witchcraft no more than the critics ; neither, perhaps, did Ford and Dekker, but they dealt with those who did ; and we are less concerned with the visionary creed of our forefathers than with the skill and dexterity of those who wrote in conformity to it, and the moral or ethical maxims which they enable us to draw from it.

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xli

"The serious part of this drama is sweetly written. The character of Susan is delineated in Ford's [?] happiest manner; pure, affectionate, confiding, faithful, and forgiving; anxious as a wife to prove her love, but fearful to offend, there is a mixture of warmth and pudency in her language, particularly in the concluding scene of the second act, which cannot fail to please the most fastidious reader. Winnifride is only second to her unfortunate rival; for, though highly culpable before marriage, she redeems her character as a wife, and insensibly steals upon our pity and regard. Even Katherine, with any other sister, would not pass unnoticed.

Carter is no unfair representative of the respectable yeoman (freeholder) of those days; and his frank and independent conduct is well contrasted with that of Banks, a small farmer, as credulous and ignorant as his labourers, positive, overbearing, and vindictive. The character of Sir Arthur Clarington is sustained with care and ability. Terrified, but not reclaimed from his profligacy by the law, he is everywhere equally odious, and ends the same mean, heartless, avaricious wretch he showed himself at first.

"Of the two plays," says Mr. Swinburne, "which bear conjointly the names of Ford and Dekker, *The Sun's Darling* is evidently, as Gifford calls it, a 'piece of patch-work' hastily stitched up for some momentary purpose; I suspect that the two poets did not work together on it, but that our present text is merely a recast by Ford of an earlier masque by Dekker: probably, as Mr. Collier has suggested, his lost play of *Phaeton*, for which we might be glad to exchange the 'loop'd and window'd nakedness' of this ragged version. In those parts which are plainly

xlii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

remnants of Dekker's handiwork there are some scattered lines of great sweetness, such as those of lament for the dead spring. For the latter scenes, as Gifford observes, it is clear that Ford is in the main responsible; the intrusion in the fifth act of political satire and adulation is singularly perverse and infelicitous. In the opening-scene, also, between Raybright and the Priest of the Sun, I recognise the moral tone and metrical regulation of Ford's verse. Whatever the original may have been—and it was probably but a thin and hasty piece of work—it has doubtless suffered from the incongruous matter loosely sewn on to it; and the masque as it stands is too lax and incoherent in structure to be worth much as a sample of its slight kind, or to shew if there was anything of more significance or value in the first conception.

The Witch of Edmonton is a play of rare beauty and importance both on poetical and social grounds. It is perhaps the first protest of the stage against the horrors and brutalities of vulgar superstition; a protest all the more precious for the absolute faith in witchcraft and devilry which goes hand in hand with compassion for the instruments as well as the victims of magic. . . . Victor Hugo could hardly show a more tender and more bitter pity for the fordid and grovelling agonies of outcast old age and reprobate misery, than that which fills and fires the speech of the wretched hag from the first scene where she appears gathering sticks to warm herself, starved, beaten, lamed and bent double with blows, pitiable and terrible in her fierce abjection, to the last moment when she is led to execution through the roar of the rabble. In all this part of the play I trace the hand of Dekker; his intimate and familiar science of wretchedness, his great and gentle spirit of compassion for the poor and suffering,

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xliii

with whom his own lot in life was so often cast, in prison and out. The two chief soliloquies of Mother Sawyer, her first and last invocations of the familiar, are noble samples of his passionate dramatic power; their style has a fiery impulse and rapidity quite unlike the usual manner of his colleague. . . . The part of Susan is one of Dekker's most beautiful and delicate studies; in three short scenes he has given an image so perfect in its simple sweetness as hardly to be overmatched outside the gallery of Shakespeare's women. The tender freshness of his pathos, its plain frank qualities of grace and strength, never showed themselves with purer or more powerful effect than here; the after-scene where Frank's guilt is discovered has the same force and vivid beauty. The interview of Frank with the disguised Winnifrede in this scene may be compared by the student of dramatic style with the parting of the same characters at the close; the one has all the poignant simplicity of Dekker, the other all the majestic energy of Ford. The rough buffoonery and horseplay of the clown and the familiar we may probably set down to Dekker's account; there is not much humour or meaning in it, but it is livelier and less offensive than most of Ford's attempts in that line."²⁶

The precise date of Dekker's death is as uncertain as that of his birth; but "we hear nothing of him," says Mr. Collier, "after 1638, and he is supposed to have died before the Civil Wars."

The only portrait of Dekker known to exist

²⁶ *Fortnightly Review*. Art. on JOHN FORD by A. C. Swinburne, July 1871, pp. 55—57.

xliv *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

is in a rude woodcut on the title-page of *Dekker his Dreame* : Lond. 1620.

Mr. Halliwell, in the preface to his reprint (1860) of this pamphlet, says : " There can be but little doubt that the woodcut on the title-page contains a genuine portrait of Dekker ; and, as such, it is of great interest."

Some brief notices of a few of Dekker's prose productions, extracted from Mr. Payne Collier's *Bibliographical Account of the Rarest Books in the English Language*, may be not without interest here :—

The (unique) tract entitled *Warres, Warres, Warres*, 1628, 12mo, is dedicated to Hugh Hammerley, Lord Mayor, and to the two Sheriffs of London and Middlefex for the year ; and Dekker states that, as City Poet, he had been employed to write the pageant for Hammerley's Mayoralty, and he seems to have been not a little proud of it. He says, " What I offred up then was a Sacrifice *ex officio*. Custome tooke my Bond for the Performance ; and on the day of the Ceremony I hope the debt was fully discharged." If it were ever printed it has not survived.

The Ravens Almanacke (1609) is subscribed " T. Deckers," which was probably the printer's, certainly not the author's, mode of spelling his

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xlv

name. There is a good "song sung by an olde Woman in a Medowe."

Of the Double PP, 1606, 4to, published anonymously, a presentation copy, with Dekker's autograph, is in existence. It has little but its rarity to recommend it; it is a violent, and, as far as we can understand the allusions, not very witty attack upon the Catholics, provoked by the Gunpowder Plot of the year preceding its publication.

The Seven Deadly Sinnes of London. 1606. 4to.

This tract was one of those which Dekker produced on the spur of his necessities, and he makes it a boast on his title-page that it only cost him a week's work. . . . As if determined not to lose any credit, or perhaps profit, by this production, Dekker not only placed his name prominently on the title-page, but he, somewhat unusually, subscribed it at the end, thus :—

"Dii me terrent, et Jupiter hostis."

Finis

Tho. Dekker."

The *Jupiter* and *Dii* were, perhaps at this time a bailiff and his followers, in search of the author for the non-payment of some debt.

The Guls Horne-booke, 1609, B. L. 4to.

This is unquestionably the most entertaining,

xlvi *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

and, exclusive of his plays, perhaps the best of Dekker's numerous works in verse and prose. It is full of lively descriptions of the manners of the beginning of the reign of James I., including accounts of, or allusions to, most of the popular and fashionable amusements. The work is entirely prose, and is divided into eight chapters, which are introduced by a *Proemium*.

A writer, already quoted, has well summed up the character and career of Dekker in these words :—

“ A man whose inborn sweetness and gleefulness of soul carried him through vexations and miseries which would have crushed a spirit less hopeful, cheerful, and humane. He was probably born about the year 1575 ; commenced his career as player and playwright before 1598 ; and for forty years was an author by profession, that is, was occupied in fighting famine with his pen. The first intelligence we have of him is characteristic of his whole life. It is from Henslowe's Diary, under date of February, 1598 : ‘ Lent unto the company, to discharge Mr. Decker out of the counter in the powltry, the sum of 40 shillings.’ Oldys tells us that ‘ he was in King's Bench Prison from 1613 to 1616 ;’ and the antiquary adds ominously, ‘ how much longer I know not.’ Indeed, Dr. Johnson's celebrated condensation of the scholar's life would stand for a biography of Dekker :—

‘ Toil, envy, want, the patron, and the jail’

“ This forced familiarity with poverty and distress does not seem to have embittered his feelings or weakened the

Memoir of Thomas Dekker. xlvii

force and elasticity of his mind. He turned his calamities into commodities. If indigence threw him into the society of the ignorant, the wretched, and the depraved, he made the knowledge of low life he thus obtained serve his purpose as dramatist or pamphleteer. Whatever may have been the effect of his vagabond habits on his principles, they did not stain the sweetness and purity of his sentiments. There is an innocency in his very coarseness, and a brisk, bright good-nature chirps in his very scurrility. In the midst of distresses of all kinds, he seems, like his own Fortunatus, 'all felicity up to the brims ;' but that his content with Fortune is not owing to an unthinking ignorance of her caprice and injustice is proved by the words he puts into her mouth." (27)

It is a sad story of genius allied to misfortune ; of a man of the rarest gifts and insight, whom the iron tyranny of circumstance prevented from being wise for himself. Even the guerdon of Fame—that fallacious consolation and hope of the disappointed—seemed as if it were to evade him. The renewed impulse towards the study of our earlier poets has at last awakened a long-slumbering curiosity ; but more than two centuries were to elapse after Thomas Dekker was laid in his grave before his immortal contributions to the English drama were destined to be placed within the reach of general readers.

27 *Atlantic Monthly*, 1867. § *Minor Elizabethan Dramatists*.

xlviiii *Memoir of Thomas Dekker.*

The text has been reprinted *verbatim et literatim* from the original editions ; the spelling and punctuation, and even the character of the type as far as possible, have been preserved. A few Notes and Illustrations (elucidative of difficult passages, and embodying the researches of Malone, Steevens, Reed, Collier, Dilke, Gifford, Fairholt, Dyce, and others) have been added to each volume ; but the bickerings of rival editors have been carefully eliminated. Only a few of the notes are entirely original, but those borrowed from the sources above indicated, have in many cases been considerably altered, corrected, abridged, or amplified. This general acknowledgment will doubtless be deemed sufficient.



THE
SHOMAKERS
Holiday.

OR

The Gentle Craft.

With the humorous life of Simon
Eyre, shoemaker, and Lord Maior
of London.

As it was acted before the Queenes most excellent
Maiestie on New-yeares day at night last, by
the right honourable the Earle of Notingham,
Lord high Admirall of England, his seruants.



Printed by Valentine Sims dwelling at the foote of Adling
hill, neere Bainards Castle, at the signe of the White
Swanne, and are there to be sold.

1600.

[There are three later editions of *The Shoemakers' Holiday* published in Dekker's lifetime, bearing date 1610, 1618, and 1631 respectively. The present text has been formed by a careful collation of these with the first edition. Some of the verbal differences are indicated in footnotes.]



To all good Fellowes, Professoꝛs of
the Gentle Craft; of what degree
foeuer.

Kinde Gentlemen, and honest boone Companions, I present you here with a merrie conceited Comedie, called, *the Shoemakers Holyday*, acted by my Lorde Admiralls Players this present Christmasse, before the Queenes most excellent Maiestie. For the mirth and pleasant matter, by her Highnesse graciously accepted; being indeede no way offensiuē. The Argument of the play I will set downe in this Epistle: Sir *Hugh Lacie* Earle of *Lincolne*, had a yong Gentleman of his owne name, his nere kinsman, that loued the Lorde Maiors daughter of London; to preuent and crosse which loue, the Earle caused his kinsman to be sent Coronell of a companie into France: who resigned his place to another gentleman his friend, and came disguised like a Dutch Shoemaker, to the house of *Symon Eyre* in Tower streete, who serued the Maior and his household with shooes. The merri-ments that passed in Eyres house, his comming to be Maior of *London*, *Lacies* getting his loue, and other accidents; with two merry Three-mens songs. Take all in good worth that is well intended, for nothing is purposed but mirth, mirth lengtheneth long life; which, with all other blessings I heartily wish you.

Farewell.

,

.

.

.

i



The first Three-mans

Song.

O the month of Maie, the merrie month of Maie,
So frolicke, so gay, and so greene, so greene, so greene :
O and then did I vnto my true loue fay,
Sweete Peg, thou shalt be my Summers Queene.

Now the Nightingale, the prettie Nightingale,
The sweetest finger in all the Forrest quier :
Intreates thee sweete Peggie, to heare thy true loues tale,
Loe, yonder she sitteth, her breast against a brier.

But O I spie the Cuckoo, the Cuckoo, the Cuckoo,
See where she sitteth, come away my ioy :
Come away I prithee, I do not like the Cuckoo
Should sing where my Peggie and I kisse and toy.

O the month of Maie, the merrie month of Maie,
So frolike, so gay, and so greene, so greene, so greene :
And then did I, vnto my true loue fay,
Sweete Peg, thou shalt be my Summers Queene.





A pleafant Comedie of
the Gentle Craft.

Enter Lord Maior, Lincolne.

Lincolne.

MY Lord Maior, you haue fundrie times
Feafted my felfe, and many Courtiers more,
Seldome, or neuer can we be fo kind,
To make requitall of your curtefie :
But leauing this, I heare my cofen Lacie
Is much affected to your daughter Rofe. *R.*

L. Maior. True my good Lord, and ſhe loues him
fo wel,
That I millike her boldneffe in the chace.

Lincol. Why my lord Maior, think you it then a
ſhame,
To ioyne a Lacie with an Otleys name ?

L. Maior. Too meane is my poore girle for his high
birth,

Poore Cittizens muſt not with Courtiers wed,
Who will in filkes, and gay apparrell ſpend
More in one yeare, then I am worth by farre,
Therefore your honour neede not doubt my girle.

Lincolne. Take heede my Lord, aduiſe you what
you do,

A verier vnthrift liues not in the world,
Then is my cofen, for Ile tel you what,

Tis now almost a yeare since he requested
 To trauell countries for experience,
 I furnisht him with coyne, billes of exchange,
 Letters of credite, men to waite on him,
 Solicited my friends in Italie
 Well to respect him : but to see the end :
 Scant had he iornied through halfe Germanie,
 But all his coyne was spent, his men cast off,
 His billes imbezeld, and my iolly coze,
 Asham'd to shew his bankrupt preface here,
 Became a Shoemaker in Wittenberg,
 A goodly science for a gentleman
 Of such discent : now iudge the rest by this.
 Suppose your daughter haue a thousand pound,
 He did consume me more in one halfe yeare,
 And make him heyre to all the wealth you haue,
 One twelue moneth's rioting wil waste it all,
 Then seeke (my Lord) some honest Cittizen
 To wed your daughter to.

L. Maior. I thanke your Lordship,
 Wel Foxe, I vnderstand your subtiltie,
 As for your nephew, let your lordships eie
 But watch his actions, and you neede not feare,
 For I haue my daughter farre enough,
 And yet your cosen Rowland might do well
 Now he hath learn'd an occupation,
 And yet I scorne to call him sonne in law.

L. Maior. I but I haue a better trade for him,
 I thanke his grace he hath appointed him,
 Chiefe colonell of all those companies
 Mustred in London, and the shires about,
 To serue his highnesse in those warres of France :
 See where he comes : Louel what newes with you ?

Enter Louell, Lacie, and Askew.

Louell. My Lord of Lincolne, tis his highnesse
 will,
 That presently your cosen ship for France
 With all his powers, he would not for a million,

the Gentle Craft.

11

But they should land at Deepe within foure daies.

Linc. Goe certifie his grace it shall be done :

Exit Louell.

Now cofen Lacie, in what forwardnesse
Are all your companies ?

Lacie. All wel prepar'd,
The men of Hartfordshire lie at Mile end,
Suffolke, and Essex, traine in Tuttle fields,
The Londoners, and those of Middlesex,
All gallantly prepar'd in Finfbury,
With frolike spirits, long for their parting houre.

L. Maior. They haue their imprest, coates, and
furniture,

And if it please your cofen Lacie come
To the Guild Hall, he shall receiue his pay,
And twentie pounds besides my brethren
Will freely giue him, to approue our loues
We beare vnto my Lord your vncl here.

Lacie. I thanke your honour.

Lincoln. Thanks my good Lord Maior.

L. Ma. At the Guild Hal we wil expect your
comming.

Exit.

Lincolne. To approue your loues to me? no
subtiltie

Nephew : that twentie pound he doth bestow,
For ioy to rid you from his daughter Rose :
But cofens both, now here are none but friends,
I would not haue you cast an amorous eie
Upon so meane a proiect, as the loue
Of a gay wanton painted cittizen,
I know this churle, euen in the height of scorne,
Doth hate the mixture of his bloud with thine,
I pray thee do thou so, remember coze,
What honourable fortunes wayt on thee,
Increase the kings loue which so brightly shines,
And gilds thy hopes, I haue no heire but thee :
And yet not thee, if with a wayward spirit,
Thou start from the true byas of my loue.

Lacie. My Lord, I will (for honor (not desire

Of lands or liuings) or to be your heire)
 So guide my actions in purfuit of France,
 As fhall adde glorie to the Lacies name.

Lincolne Coze, for thofe words heres thirtie Portugues,

And Nephew Askew, there's a few for you,
 Faire Honour in her loftieft eminence
 Staies in France for you till you fetch her thence,
 Then Nephewes, clap fwift wings on your diffignes,
 Be gone, be gone, make hafte to the Guild Hall,
 There prefently Ile meete you, do not ftay,
 Where honour becomes, fhame attends delay. *Exit.*

Askew. How gladly would your vnclc haue you gone?

Lacie. True coze, but Ile ore-reach his policies,
 I haue fome ferious bufineffe for three dayes,
 Which nothing but my prefence can difpatch,
 You therefore cofen with the companies
 Shall hafte to Douer, there Ile meete with you,
 Or if I ftay paff my prefixed time,
 Away for France, wee le meete in Normandie,
 The twentie pounds my Lord Maior giues to me
 You fhall receiue, and thefe ten portugues,
 Part of mine vncles thirtie, gentle coze,
 Haue care to our great charge, I know your wifedome
 Hath tride it felfe in higher confluence.

Askew. Coze, al my felfe am yours, yet haue this care,

To lodge in London with al fecrefie,
 Our vnclc Lincolne hath (befides his owne)
 Many a iealous eie, that in your face
 Stares onely to watch meanes for your difgrace.

Lacie. Stay cofen, who be thefe?

Enter Symon Eyre, his wife, Hodge, Firk, Jane, & Rafe with a peece.

Eyre. Leaue whining, leaue whining, away with

this whimpering, this pewling, these blubbring teares, and these wet eies, Ile get thy husband discharg'd, I warrant thee sweete Jane: go to.

Hodge. Master, here be the captaines.

Eyre. Peace Hodge, husht ye knaue, husht.

Firke. Here be the caualiers, and the coronels, maister.

Eyre. Peace Firke, peace my fine Firke, stand by with your pishery pasherie, away, I am a man of the best prefence, Ile speake to them and they were Popes, gentlemen, captaines, colonels, commanders: braue men, braue leaders, may it please you to giue me audience, I am Simon Eyre, the mad Shoemaker of Tower streete, this wench with the mealy mouth that wil neuer tire, is my wife I can tel you, heres Hodge my man, and my foreman, heres Firke my fine firking iourney-man, and this is blubbered Jane, al we come to be suters for this honest Rafe keepe him at home, and as I am a true shoemaker, and a gentleman of the Gentle Craft, buy spurs your self, and Ile find ye bootes these seuen yeeres.

Wife. Seuen yeares husband?

Eyre. Peace Midriffe, peace, I know what I do, peace.

Firke. Truly master cormorant, you shal do God good seruice to let Rafe and his wife stay together, shees a yong new married woman, if you take her husband away from her a night, you undoo her, she may beg in the day time, for hees as good a workman at a pricke and awle, as any is in our trade.

Jane. O let him stay, else I shal be vndone.

Firke. I truly, she shal be laid at one side like a paire of old shooes else, and be occupied for no vse.

Lacie. Truly my friends, it lies not in my power, The Londoners are prest, paide, and fet forth By the Lord Major, I cannot change a man.

Hodge. Why then you were as good be a corporall, as a colonel, if you cannot discharge one good fellow, and I tell you true, I thinke you doe more then you

can answere, to presse a man within a yeare and a day of his marriage.

Eyre. Wel said melancholy Hodge, gramercy my fine foreman.

Wife. Truly gentlemen, it were il done, for such as you, to stand so stiffely against a poore yong wife : considering her case, she is newly married, but let that passe : I pray deale not roughly with her, her husband is a yong man and but newly entred, but let that passe.

Eyre. Away with your pisserie pasherie, your pols and your edipolls, peace Midasse, silence Cisly Bum-trincket, let your head speake.

Firke. Yea and the hornes too, master.

Eyre. Too soone, my fine Firk, too soone : peace scoundrels, see you this man ? Capitaines, you will not release him, wel let him go, he is a proper shot, let him vanish, peace Jane, drie vp thy teares, theile make his powder dankish, take him braue men, Hector of Troy was a hackney to him, Hercules and Termagant scoundrelles, Prince Arthurs Round table, by the Lord of Ludgate, nere fed such a tall, such a dapper swordman : by the life of Pharo, a braue resolute swordman, peace Jane, I say no more, mad knaues.

Firke. See, see Hodge, how my maister raues in commendation of Rafe.

Hodge. Raph, thou'rt a gull by this hand, an thou goest not.

Askew. I am glad (good master Eyre) it is my hap To meete so resolute a fouldiour.

Trust me, for your report, and loue to him,
A common slight regard shall not respect him.

Lacie. Is thy name Raph ?

Raph. Yes fir.

Lacie. Giue me thy hand,
Thou shalt not want, as I am a gentleman :
Woman, be patient, God (no doubt) wil send
Thy husband safe againe, but he must go,

His countries quarrel sayes, it shall be so.

Hodge. Thart a gull by my stirrop, if thou dost not goe, I wil not haue thee strike thy gimblet into these weake vessels, pricke thine enemies Rafe.

Enter Dodger.

Dodger. My lord, your vncke on the Tower hill, Stayes with the lord Mayor, and the Aldermen, And doth request you with al speede you may To hasten thither. *Exit Dodger.*

Askeu. Cofin, come let vs go.

Lacy. *Dodger*, runne you before, tel them we come, This *Dodger* is mine uncles parasite, The arrantst varlet that e're breathd on earth, He sets more discord in a noble house, By one daies broching of his pick-thanke tales, Then can be salu'd againe in twentie yeares, And he (I feare) shall go with vs to France, To prie into our actions.

Askeu. Therefore coze,

It shall behooue you to be circumspect.

Lacy. Feare not good cofen : Raph, hie to your colours.

Raph. I must, because there is no remedie, But gentle maister and my louing dame, As you haue alwaies beene a friend to me, So in mine absence thinke vpon my wife.

Jane. Alas my Raph.

Wife. She cannot speake for weeping.

Eyre. Peace you crackt groates, you mustard tokens, disquiet not the brave souldier, goe thy waies Raph.

Jane. I I, you bid him go, what shal I do when he is gone ?

Firk. Why be doing with me, or my fellow Hodge, be not idle.

Eyre. Let me see thy hand Jane, this fine hand, this white hand, these prettie fingers must spin, must card, must worke, worke you bombast cotten-candle-

queane, worke for your liuing with a pox to you : hold thee Raph, heres fīue sixpences for thee, fight for the honour of the *Gentle Craft*, for the gentlemen Shoemakers, the couragious Cordwainers, the flower of S. Martins, the mad knaues of Bedlem, Fleetstreete, Towerstreete, and white Chappell, cracke me the crownes of the French knaues, a poxe on them, cracke them, fight, by the lord of Ludgate, fight my fine boy.

Firke. Here Rafe, here's three two pences, two carry into France, the third shal wash our foules at parting (for sorrow is drie) for my sake, Firke the *Basta mon cues*.

Hodge. Raph, I am heauy at parting, but heres a shilling for thee, God fend thee to cramme thy flops with French crownes, and thy enemies bellies with bullets.

Raph. I thanke you maister, and I thanke you all : Now gentle wife, my louing louely Jane, Rich men at parting, giue their wiues rich gifts, Jewels and rings, to grace their lillie hands, Thou know'st our trade makes rings for womens heeles :

Here take this paire of shooes cut out by Hodge,
Sticht by my fellow Firke, seam'd by my selfe,
Made vp and pinckt, with letters for thy name,
Weare them my deere Jane, for thy husbands sake,
And euerie morning when thou pull'st them on,
Remember me, and pray for my returne,
Make much of them, for I haue made them so,
That I can know them from a thousand mo.

Sound drumme, enter Lord Maior, Lincolne, Lacy, Askew, Dodger, and souldiers, They passe ouer the stage, Rafe fallies in amongst them, Firke and the rest cry farewel, &c. and so Exeunt.

Enter Rose alone making a Garland.

Rose. Here sit thou downe vpon this flowry banke,
And make a garland for thy *Lacies* head,

These pinkes, these rofes, and these violets,
 These blushing gilliflowers, these marigoldes,
 The faire embroidery of his coronet,
 Carry not halfe fuch beauty in their cheekes,
 As the sweete countnaunce of my *Lacy* doth.
 O my moft vnkinde father ! O my ftarres !
 Why lowrde you fo at my natiuity,
 To make me loue, yet liue robd of my loue ?
 Here as a theefe am I imprifoned
 (For my deere *Lacies* fake) within thofe walles,
 Which by my fathers coft were builded vp
 For better purpofes : here muft I languifh
 For him that doth as much lament (I know)
 Mine abfence, as for him I pine in woe.

Enter Sibil.

Sibil. Good morrow yong Miftris, I am fure you
 make that garland for me, againft I fhall be Lady of
 the Harueft.

Rofe. *Sibil*, what news at London ?

Sibil. None but good : my lord Mayor your
 father, and maifter *Philpot* your vncl, and maifter
Scot your coofin, and miftris *Frigbottom* by Doctors
 Commons, doe all (by my troth) fend you moft hearty
 commendations.

Rofe. Did *Lacy* fend kind greetings to his loue ?

Sibil. O yes, out of cry, by my troth, I fcant
 knew him, here a wore a fcarffe, and here a fcarfe, here
 a bunch of fethers, and here pretious ftones and
 iewells, and a paire of garters : O monftrous ! like one
 of our yellow filke curtains, at home here in Old-ford
 houfe, here in maifter *Bellymounts* chamber, I floode
 at our doore in Cornehill, lookt at him, he at me
 indeed, fpake to him, but he not to me, not a word,
 mary gup thought I with a wanion, he pafft by me as
 prowde, mary foh, are you growne humorous thought
 I ? and fo fhut the doore, and in I came.

Rofe. O *Sibil*, how doft thou my *Lacy* wrong ?
 My Rowland is as gentle as a lambe,

No doue was euer halfe so milde as he.

Sibil. Milde? yea, as a bushel of stampt crabs, he lookt vpon me as fowre as veriuce: goe thy wayes thought I, thou maist be much in my gaskins, but nothing in my neather stockes: this is your fault mistris, to loue him that loues not you, he thinkes scorn to do as he's done to, but if I were as you, Ide cry, go by *Ieronimo*, go by, Ide set mine olde debts against my new driblets, and the hares foot against the goose giblets, for if euer I sigh when sleepe I should take, pray God I may loofe my mayden-head when I wake.

Rose. Will my loue leaue me then and go to France?

Sibil. I knowe not that, but I am sure I see him stalke before the souldiers, by my troth he is a proper man, but he is proper that proper doth let him goe snicke-vp yong mistris.

Rose. Get thee to London, and learne perfectly, Whether my *Lacy* go to France, or no: Do this, and I wil giue thee for thy paines, My cambricke apron, and my romish gloues, My purple stockings, and a stomacher, Say, wilt thou do this *Sibil* for my sake?

Sibil. Will I quoth a? at whose suite? by my troth yes, Ile go, a cambricke apron, gloues, and a paire of purple stockings, and a stomacher, Ile sweat in purple mistris for you, ile take any thing that comes a Gods name, O rich, a Cambricke apron; faith then haue at vp tailes all, Ile go, Jiggy, Joggy to London, and be here in a trice yong Mistris. *Exit.*

Rose. Do so good *Sibill*, meane time wretched I Will fit and sigh for his lost companie. *Exit.*

Enter Rowland Lacy like a Dutch Shooe-maker.

Lacy. How many shapcs haue gods and kings deuifde,
Thereby to compasse their desired loues?
It is no shame for Rowland Lacy then,

To clothe his cunning with the Gentle Craft,
 That thus disguise, I may vnknowne possesse,
 The onely happie presence of my Rose :
 For her haue I forooke my charge in France,
 Incurd the kings displeasure, and stir'd vp
 Rough hatred in mine vncke Lincolnes brest :
 O loue, how powerfull art thou, that canst change
 High birth to basenesse, and a noble mind,
 To the meane semblance of a shoemaker :
 But thus it must be, for her cruell father,
 Hating the single vnion of our soules,
 Hath secretly conueyd my Rose from London,
 To barre me of her presence, but I trust
 Fortune and this disguise will further me
 Once more to view her beautie, gaine her sight,
 Here in Towerstreete with Eyre the shoemaker,
 Meane I a while to worke, I know the trade,
 I learn't it when I was at Wittenberge :
 Then cheere thy hoping sprites, be not dismaide,
 Thou canst not want, do fortune what she can,
 The Gentle Craft is liuing for a man. *Exit.*

Enter Eyre making himselfe readie.

Eyre. Where be these boyes, these girles, these
 drabbes, these scoundrels, they wallow in the fat
 brewisse of my bottie, and licke vp the crums of my
 table, yet wil not rise to see my walkes cleaned : come
 out you powder-beefe-queanes, what Nan, what
 Madge-mumble-crust, come out you fatte Midriffe-swag-
 belly whores, and sweepe me these kennels, that the
 noysome stench offende not the nose of my neigh-
 bours : (1) what Firke I say, what Hodge ? open my
 shop windowes, what Firke I say.

Enter Firke.

Firke. O Master, ist you that speake bandog and

(1) The later Editions read "that the noysome filth offend not
 the noses of neighbors."

Bedlam this morning, I was in a house, and misted what mad-man was got into the street to care, have you drunk this morning that your throat is so cleere?

Eyre. Ah well and *Firke* well said *Firke* to worke my fine shame to worke with thy face, and thou'lt be more dead.

Firke. Let then wash my face that will ease it, good Master send for a Souer-wine, if you will have my face cleerer.

Enter Hodge.

Eyre. Away downe, want scoundrell, good morrow *Hodge* good morrow my fine Fore-man.

Hodge. O Master, good morrow, yare an carely stirrer, heere's a faire morning, good morrow *Firke*, I could have slept this houre, heere's a brane day to warre.

Eyre. O hast to worke my fine Fore-man, hast to worke.

Firke. Master, I am drie as dust to heare my fellow *Roger* talke of faire weather, let vs pray for good leather, and let Clownes and Plow-boyes, and those that worke in the fields pray for brane daies, wee worke in a drie shoppe, what care I if it raine?

Enter Eyres wife.

Eyre. How now dame *Margerie*, can you see to rise? trip and go, call up the drabs your maides.

Wife. See to rise? I hope tis time enough, tis early enough for any Woman to bee seene abroad, I maruell how many wiues in Tower street are vp so soone: Gods me tis not noone, heeres a yawling.

Eyre. Peace *Margerie*, peace, wher's *Cissy Bum-trinket* your maid? shee hath a priuie fault, shee farts in her sleepe, call the queane vp, if my men want shoos threed, Ile swinge her in a stirrop.

Firke. Yet that's but a drie beating, heere's still a signe of drought.

Enter Lacy singing.

Lacy. Der was een bore van Gelder-
land, Frolick si byen,
He was als dronke he cold nyet stand,
by solce se byen,
Tap eens de canneken drinck schone
mannekin.

Firke. Maister, for my life yonders a brother of the Gentle Craft, if hee beare not Saint *Hughes* bones Ile forfeit my bones, hee's some yplandish workeman, hire him good maister, that I may learne some gibble gabble, 'twill make vs worke the faster.

Eyre. Peace *Firke*, a hard world, let him passe, let him vanish, we haue iournymen enow, peace my fine *Firke*.

Wife. Nay nay y'are best follow your mans counsell, you shall see what will come on't, we haue not men enow, but wee must entertaine euery butterboxe; but let that passe.

Hodge. Dame, fore God if my maister follow your counsell hee'le consume little beefe, he shall be glad of men, and he can catch them.

Firke. I that he shall.

Hodge. Afore God a proper man, and I warrant a fine workeman: Maister farewell, dame adue, if such a man as he cannot find worke, *Hodge* is not for you.

Offer to goe.

Eyre. Stay my fine *Hodge*.

Firke. Faith and your foreman goe, dame you must take a journey to seeke a new iourneyman, if *Roger* remoue, *Firke* followes, if Saint *Hughes* bones shall not be set a worke, I may pricke mine awle in the wals, and goe play: fare ye wel maister, God buy dame.

Eyre. Tarrie my fine *Hodge*, my briske foreman, stay *Firke* peace pudding broth, by the Lord of Ludgate I loue my men as my life, peace you gallimaufrey,

Hodge if hee want worke Ile hire him, one of you to him, stay he comes to vs.

Lacy. Goeden dach meester, ende b bro oak.

Firke. Nailes if I should speak after him without drinking, I should choak, and you friend Oake, are you of the gentle craft?

Lacy. Paw, paw, ich beene den shoemaker.

Firke. Den shoemaker quoth a, and hearke you shoemaker, haue you all your tooles, a good rubbing pin, a good stopper, a good dresser, your foure sorts of Aules, and your two balles of waxe, your paring knife, your hand and thum-leathers, and good Saint *Hughes* bones to smooth vp your worke.

Lacy. Paw, paw, bee niet bor beard, ik hab all de dingen, bour mark shoes groot and cleane.

Firke. Ha, ha, good master hire him, heele make me laugh so that I shall worke more in mirth than I can in earnest.

Eyre. Heere you friend, haue you any skill in the mystery of Cordwainers?

Lacy. Ick weet niet wat you seg ich verstaou you niet.

Firke. Why thus man, Ich verste v niet, quoth a.

Lacy. Paw, paw, paw, ick can dat well doen.

Firke. Yaw, yaw, he speakes yawing like a Jack daw, that gapes to be fed with cheefe curdes, O heele giue a villanous pull at a can of double beere, but *Hodge* and I haue the vantage, wee must drinke first, because wee are the eldest Iourneymen.

Eyre. What is thy name?

Lacy. *Hans, Hans, Meulter.*

Eyre. Giue me thy hand, thou art welcome, *Hodge*, entertaine him, *Firke* bid him welcome, come *Hans*, run wife, bid your maids, your trulli-bubs, make ready my fine mens breakfasts: to him *Hodge*.

Hodge. Hans, th'art welcome, vse thy selfe friendly, for we are good fellowes, if not, thou shalt be fought with, wert thou bigger than a Gyant.

Firke. Yea, and drunk with, wert thou *Gargantua*, my master keeps no Cowards, I tell thee: hoe, boy, bring him an heele-blocke, heers a new iourneyman.

Enter Boy.

Lacy. ☉ ich wersto you, ich moet een halbe dossen Cans betalen: here boy nempt dis skilling, tap eens freelicke.

Exit Boy.

Eyre. Quicke snipper snapper, away *Firke*, scowre thy throat, thou shalt wash it with Castillian liquor.

Enter Boy.

Come my laft of the fues, give mee a Can, haue to thee *Hans*, here *Hodge*, here *Firke*, drinke you mad Greekes, and worke like true Troyans, and pray for *Simon Eyre* the Shoomaker, heere *Hans* and th'art welcome.

Firke. Lo dame, you would haue lost a good fellow that will teach vs to laugh, this beere came hopping in well.

Wife. Simon, ~~it is~~ almost feuen.

Eyre. Ist so dame clapper dudgeon, ist feuen a clocke, and my mens breakfast not readie? trip and go you fowst cunger, away, come you madde Hiperbo-reans, follow me *Hodge*, follow me *Hans*, come after

my fine *Firke*, to worke, to worke a while, and then to breakfast. *Exit.*

Firke. Soft, yaw, yaw, good *Hans*, though my master haue no more wit but to call you afore me, I am not so foolish to go behind you, I being the elder journeymen. *Excunt.*

Hollowing within. Enter Warner and Hammon, like hunters.

Hammon. Cofen beate euery brake, the game's not farre,
This way with winged feet he fled from death,
Whilst the purfuing hounds senting his steps,
Find out his high way to destruction.
Besides, the Millers boy told me euen now,
He saw him take foile and he hallowed him :
Affirming him so embost,
That long he could not hold.

Warner. If it be so,
Tis best we trace these meddowes by Old-Ford.

A noise of hunters within, enter a boy.

Hammon. How now boy, where's the Deere ?
speak, sawst thou him ?

Boy. O yea, I saw him leape through a hedge, and then ouer a ditch, then at my Lord Maiors pale ouer he skipt mee, and in he went me, and holla the hunters cride, and there boy, there boy, but there he is a mine honestie.

Ham. Boy God a mercie, Cofen lets away,
I hope we shall find better sport to day. *Excunt.*

Hunting within, enter Rose and Sibill.

Rose. Why *Sibill*, wilt thou proue a Forrester?

Sibill. Upon some no. Forrester go by : no faith mistris, the Deere came running into the Barne, through the Orchard and ouer the pale, I wot well, I look't as pale as a new cheefe to see him, but whip faies goodman Pinclose, vp with his flaile, and our *Nicke*

with a prong, and downe he fell, and they vpon him,
and I vpon them, by my troth wee had fuch sport, and
in the end we ended him, his throat wee cut, flead
him, vnhorned him, and my Lord Maior shall eate of
him anon when he comes.

Hornes found within.

Rofe. Heark, heark, the hunters come, y'are beft
take heed,
They'l haue a faying to you for this deed.

Enter Hammon, Warner, huntfmen, and boy.

Ham. God faue you faire Ladies.

Sibill. Ladies, O groffe !

War. Came not a Bucke this way ?

Rofe. No, but two Does.

Ham. And which way went they ? faith wee'l hunt
at thofe.

Sibill. At thofe ? vpon fome no : when, can you
tell ?

War. Vpon fome, I.

Sibill. Good Lord !

War. Zounds then farewell.

Ham. Boy, which way went he ?

Boy. This way fir he ran.

Ham. This way he ran indeed, faire Miftris *Rofe*,
Our game was lately in your orchard feene.

War. Can you aduife which way he tooke his
flight ?

Sibill. Follow your nofe, his hornes will guide you
right.

War. Th'art a mad wench.

Sibill. O rich !

Rofe. Trust me, not I,

It is not like that the wild forreft deere,
Would come fo neere to places of refort,
You are deceiu'd, he fled fome other way.

War. Which way my fugar-candy, can you fhew ?

Sibill. Come vp good honnifops, vpon fome, no.

Rose. Why do you stay and not pursue your game ?

Sibill. He hold my life their hunting nags be lame.

Ham. A deere, more deere is found within this place.

Rose. But not the Deere (sir) which you had in chace.

Ham. I chac'd the deere, but this deere chafeth me.

Rose. The strangest hunting that euer I see,
But where's your parke ?

She offers to go away.

Ham. Tis here : O stay.

Rose. Impale me, and then I will not stray.

War. They wrangle wench, we are more kind than they.

Sibill. What kind of heart is that (deere heart) you seeke ?

War. A Hart, deere heart.

Sibill. Who euer saw the like ?

Rose. To lose your heart, is't possible you can ?

Ham. My heart is lost.

Rose. Alacke good Gentleman.

Ham. This poore lost heart would I wish you might find.

Rose. You by such luck might proue your heart a hind.

Ham. Why Lucke had hornes, so haue I heard some say ?

Rose. Now God and't be his will fend luck into your way.

Enter L. Maior, and seruants.

L. Ma. What M. Hammon, welcome to Old Ford.

Sibill. Gods pittikins, hands off sir, heeres my Lord.

L. Ma. I heare you had ill lucke, and lost your game.

Ham. Tis true my Lord.

L. Ma. I am forrie for the same.
What gentleman is this?

Ham. My brother in law.

L. Ma. Y'are welcome both, sith Fortune offers you

Into my hands, you shall not part from hence,
Untill you haue refresht your wearied limbes.
Go Sibill couer the boord, you shall be guest
To no good cheere, but euen a hunters feast.

Ham. I thanke your Lordship: coufen, on my life,
For our lost venison I shall find a wife. *Exeunt.*

L. Ma. In gentlemen, Ile not be absent long.

This *Hammon* is a proper gentleman,

A citizen by birth, fairely allide,

How fit a huf band were he for my girle?

Well, I will in, and do the best I can,

To match my daughter with this gentleman. *Exit.*

Enter Lacy, Skipper, Hodge, and Firk.

Skip. Ik sal polw wat seggen Hans,
dis skip dat comen from Candy is alwol,
by gots sacrament, van sugar, ciuet, al-
monds, Cambrirke, end alle dingen to-
sland towsland ding, nempt it Hans,
nempt it bor b meester, daer be bils van
laden, pour meester Symon Eyre sal hae
good ropen, wat seggen polw Hans?

Firke. What seggen de reggen de copen, flopen,
laugh *Hodge* laugh.

Lacie. Mine lieuer broder *Firke*,
bringt meester *Eyre* lot det signe vn

Swannckin, dare sal you finde dis skipper end me, wat seggen yow? broder **Firke**? doot it **Hodge** come skipper.

Exeunt.

Firke. Bring him qd. you, heeres no knauerie, to bring my maister to buy a ship, worth the lading of 2. or 3. hundred thousand pounds, alas that's nothing, a trifle, a bable **Hodge**.

Hod. The truth is **Firke**, that the Marchant owner of the Ship dares not shew his head, and therefore this Skipper that deales for him, for the loue he beares to **Hans**, offers my master **Eyre** a bargaine in the commodities, he shal haue a reasonable day of payment, he may sell the wares by that time, and be an huge gainer himselfe.

Firk. Yea, but can my fellow **Hans** lend my master twenty porpentines as an earnest pennie.

Hod. Portegues thou wouldst say, here they be
Firke,
hark, they gingle in my pocket like *S. Mary* *Queries* bells.

Enter Eyre and his Wife.

Firk. Mum, here comes my Dame and my Master, sheele scold on my life, for loytering this Monday, but al's one, let them all fay what they can, Monday's our holyday.

Wife. You sing fir sauce, but I beshrew your heart, I feare for this your singing we shall smart.

Firk. Smart for me dame, why dame, why?

Hod. Master, I hope yowle not suffer my Dame to take downe your Journeyemen.

Firk. If she take me downe, Ile take her vp, yea and take her downe too, a button-hole lower.

Eyre. Peace **Firke**, not I **Hodge**, by the life of **Pharao**, by the Lord of **Ludgate**, by this beard, euery haire whereof I value at a Kings ranfome, she shall not meddle with you, peace you bumbast-cotten-candle

queane, away Queene of Clubs, quarrel not with me and my men, with me and my fine *Firke*, ile *firke* you if you do.

Wife. Yea yea man, you may vse me as you please : but let that passe.

Eyre. Let it passe, let it vanish away : peace, am I not *Simon Eyre* ? are not these my braue men ? braue Shoormakers, all gentlemen of the Gentle Craft ? Prince am I none, yet am I nobly borne, as being the sole sonne of a Shoormaker, away rubbish, vanish, melt, melt like kitchin stufte.

Wife. Yea, yea, tis well, I must be cald rubbish, kitchin-stufte, for a sort of knaues.

Firke. Nay dame, you shall not weepe and waile in woe for me : master Ile stay no longer, heere's a vennentorie of my shop tooles : adue master, *Hodge* farewell.

Hodge. Nay stay *Firke*, thou shalt not go alone.

Wife. I pray let them go, there be more maids than Mawkin, more men than *Hodge*, and more fooles than *Firke*.

Firke. Fooles ? nailes if I tarrie now, I would my guts might be turned to shoo-thread.

Hodge. And if I stay, I pray God I may be turnd to a Turk, and set in Finsburie for boyes to shoot at : come *Firke*.

Eyre. Stay my fine knaues, you armes of my trade, you pillars of my profession, What, shall a tittle tattles words make you forsake *Simon Eyre* ? auaunt Kitchin-stufte, rippe you browne bread tannikin, out of my sight, moue mee not, haue not I tane you from felling Tripes in Eastcheape, and set you in my shop, and made you haile fellow with *Simon Eyre* the Shoormaker ? and now doe you deale thus with my Journey-men ? Looke you powder-beefe queane on the face of *Hodge* : heeres a face for a Lord.

Firke. And heere's a face for any Lady in Christendome.

Eyre. Rip you chitterling, auaunt boy, bid the Tapf-

ter of the Bores head fill me a doozen Cannes of beere for my iourneymen.

Firke. A doozen Cans? O braue, *Hodge* now Ile stay.

Eyre. And the knaue fils any more than two, hee payes for them : a doozen Cans of beere for my Journemen, heere you mad *Mesopotamians*, wash your liuers with this liquour, where bee the odde ten? no more Madge, no more, well said, drink & to work : what work dost thou *Hodge*? what work?

Hod. I am a making a paire of shooes for my Lord Maiors daughter, mistresse *Rose*.

Firke. And I a paire of shooes for *Sibill* my Lords maide, I deale with her.

Eyre. *Sibill*? fie, defile not thy fine workemanly fingers with the feet of Kitchin stufse, and basting ladies, Ladies of the Court, fine Ladies, my lads, commit their feet to our apparelling, put grosse worke to *Hans*; yarke and seame : yarke and seame.

Firke. For yarking and seaming let me alone, & I I come toot.

Hod. Well master all this is from the bias, doe you remember the Shippe my fellow *Hans* told you of, the Skipper and he are both drinking at the Swan? here be the Portugues to giue earnest, if you goe through with it, you cannot choose but be a Lord at least.

Firke. Nay dame, if my master proue not a Lord, and you a Lady, hang me.

Wife. Yea like enough, if you may loyter and tippie thus.

Firke. Tippie Dame? no we haue beene bargaining with Skellum Scanderbag : can you Dutch spreaken, for a Shippe of Silke Cipresse, laden with Sugar Candy.

Enter the boy with a veluet coat, and an Aldermans gowne, Eyre puts it on.

Eyr. Peace *Firke*, silence tittle tattle : *Hodge*, ile go

through with it, heers a seale ring, and I haue sent for a'garded gown and a damaske casocke, see where it comes, looke heere Maggy, helpe me *Firke*, apparrell me *Hodge*, filke and fatten you mad Philistines, filke and fatten.

Firke. Ha, ha, my master will be as proud as a dogge in a doublet, all in beaten damaske and veluet.

Eyr. Softly *Firke*, for rearing of the nap, and wearing thread-bear my garments : how dost thou like mee *Firke*? how do I looke my fine *Hodge*?

Hod. Why now you looke like your selfe master, I warrant you, ther's few in the citie, but will giue you the wall, and come vpon you with the right worshipfull.

Firke. Nailes my master lookes like a thread-bear cloake new turn'd, and drest : Lord, Lord, to see what good raiment doth ? dame, dame, are you not enamoured ?

Eyr. How saist thou Maggy, am I not brisk ? am I not fine ?

Wife. Fine? by my troth sweet heart very fine : by my troth I neuer likt thee so well in my life sweet heart. But let that passe, I warrant there bee many women in the citie haue not such handsome husbands, but onely for their apparell, but let that passe too.

Enter Hans and Skipper.

Hans. Godden day mester, dis be de skipper dat heb de skip van marchandize, de commodity ben good, nempt it mester, nempt it.

Eyr. God a mercy *Hans*, welcome Skipper, where lies this ship of marchandize ?

Skip. De skip beene in rouere : dor be van sugar, ciuit, Almonds, Cambricke, and a towfand towfand tings, gots sacrament, nempt it mester, yo sal heb good copen.

Firke. To him maister, O sweet maister, O sweet wares, Prunes, Almonds, Suger-candy, Carret roots,

Turnips, O braue fattening meat, let not a man buy a nutmeg but your self.

Eyre. Peace *Firke*, come Skipper, Ile goe aboard with you, *Hans* haue you made him drinke?

✓ *Skip.* Yaw, yaw, ic heb veale ge drunke.

Eyre. Come *Hans* follow me : Skipper thou shalt haue my countenance in the citie. *Exeunt.*

✓ *Firke.* Yaw heb veale ge drunke, quoth a : they may well be called butter-boxes, when they drinke fat veale, and thicke beere too : but come Dame, I hope youle chide vs no more.

Wife. No faith *Firke*, no perdy *Hodge*, I do feelee honour creepe vpon me, and which is more, a certaine rising in my flesh, but let that passe.

Firke. Rising in your flesh do you feelee say you? I you may be with child, but why should not my master feelee a rising in his flesh, hauing a gowne and a gold ring on, but you are such a shrew, youle soone pull him downe.

Wife. Ha, ha, prethee peace, thou makst my worship laugh, but let that passe : come ile goe in *Hodge*, prethee goe before me, *Firke* follow me.

Firke. *Firke* doth follow, *Hodge* passe out in state.

Exeunt.

Enter Lincolne and Dodger.

Lincoln. How now good *Dodger*, whats the newes in France?

Dodg. My Lord, vpon the eighteenth day of May, The French and English were prepared to fight, Each side with eager furie gaue the signe Of a most hot encounter, fve long houres Both armies fought together : at the length, The lot of victorie fell on our sides, Twelue thousand of the Frenchmen that day dide, Four thousand English, and no man of name, But Captaine *Hyam*, and young *Ardington*, Two gallant gentlemen, I knew them well.

Lin. But *Dodger*, prethee tell me in this fight,

How did my cozen *Lacy* beare himselfe ?

Dod. My Lord, your cozen *Lacy* was not there.

Lin. Not there ?

Dod. No, my good Lord.

Lin. Sure thou mistakest,

I saw him shipt, and a thousand eyes beside
Were witnesse of the farewells which he gaue,
When I with weeping eyes bid him adew :
Dodger take heed.

Dodg. My Lord I am aduise
That what I speake is true ; to proue it so,
His cozen *Askew* that supplide his place,
Sent me for him from France, that secretly
He might conuey himselfe hither.

Lin. Ist euen so,
Dares he so carelesly venture his life,
Upon the indignation of a King ?
Hath he despis'd my loue, and spurnd those fauours
Which I with prodigall hand pow'd on his head ?
He shall repent his rashnesse with his foule,
Since of my loue he makes no estimate,
Ue make him wish he had not knowne my hate,
Thou hast no other newes ?

Dodg. None else, my Lord.

Lin. None worfe I know thou hast : procure the
King

To crowne his giddie browes with ample honours,
Send him chiefe Colonell, and all my hope
Thus to be dashed ! but tis in vaine to grieue,
One euill cannot a worfe releuee :
Upon my life I haue found out this plot,
The old dog Loue that fawnd vpon him so,
Loue to that puling girle, his faire cheekt *Rose*,
The Lord Maiors daughter hath distracted him.
And in the fire of that loues lunacie,
Hath he burnt vp himselfe, consum'd his credit,
Lost the Kings loue, yea and I feare his life,
Onely to get a wanton to his wife :
Dodger, it is so.

Dodg. I feare so, my good Lord.

Linco. It is so, nay fure it cannot be.

I am at my wits end *Dodger*.

Dodg. Yea my Lord.

Len. Thou art acquainted with my Nephewes
haunts,

Spend this gold for thy paines, go seeke him out,

Watch at my Lord Maiors, there (if he lye)

Dodger, thou shalt be fure to meet with him :

Prethee be diligent. *Lacy*, thy name

Liu'd once in honour, now dead in shame :

Be circumspect.

Exit.

Dod. I warrant you my Lord.

Exit.

Enter Lord Maior, and Master Scot.

L. Ma. Good master *Scot*, I haue beene bold with
you,

To be a witnesse to a wedding knot,

Betwixt young master *Hammon* and my daughter.

O stand aside, see where the louers come.

Enter Hammon and Rose.

Rose. Can it be possible you loue me so

No, no, within those eye-balls I espie,

Apparant likelyhoods of flatterie,

Pray now let go my hand.

Ham. Sweet mistres *Rose*,

Misconstrue not my words, nor misconceiue

Of my affection, whose deuoted soule

Swears that I loue thee deerer than my heart.

Rose. As deere as your owne heart ! I iudge it
right.

Men loue their hearts best when th' are out of sight.

Ham. I loue you by this hand.

Rose. Yet hands off now :

If flesh be fraile, how weak and frail's your vow !

Ham. Then by my life I sweare.

Rose. Then do not brawle,
One quarrell loofeth wife and life and all,
Is not your meaning thus ?

Ham. In faith you iest.

Rose. Loue loues to sport, therefore leaue loue
yare best.

L. Ma. What ? square they master *Scot* ?

Scot. Sir, never doubt,
Louers are quickly in, and quickly out.

Ham. Sweet *Rose*, be not so strange in fantasying
me,

Nay neuer turne aside, shun not my sight,
I am not growne so fond, to fond my loue,
On any that shall quit it with disdaine,
If you will loue me, so : if not, farewell.

L. Ma. Why how now louers, are you both
agreed ?

Ham. Yes faith my Lord.

L. Ma. Tis well, giue me your hand, give me yours
daughter.

How now, both pull backe, what means this, Girle ?

Rose. I meane to liue a maide.

Ham. But not to die one, pause ere that be said.
aside.

L. Ma. Will you still crosse me ? still be obli-
nate ?

Ham. Nay chide her not my Lord for doing well,
If she can liue an happie virgins life,
Tis far more blessed than to be a wife. ?

Rose. Say sir I cannot, I haue made a vow,
Who euer be my husband, tis not you.

L. Ma. Your tongue is quicke, but M. *Hammon*
know,

I bade you welcome to another end.

Ham. What, would you haue me pule, and pine,
and pray,

With louely Lady mistris of my heart,
Pardon your seruant, and the rimer play,
Rayling on *Cupid*, and his tyrants dart

Or shall I vndertake some martiall spoile,
Wearing your gloue at Turney, and at Tilt,
And tell how many gallants I vnhorst,
Sweet, will this pleasure you ?

Rose. Yes, when wilt begin ;

What loue-rimes man ? fie on that deadly sinne.

L. Ma. If you will haue her, Ile make her agree.

Ham. Enforced loue is worse than hate to me,
There is a wench keeps shop in the old change,
To her will I, it is not wealth I seeke,
I haue enough, and will prefer her loue
Before the world : my good Lord Maior adew,
Old loue for me, I haue no lucke with new. *Exit.*

L. Ma. Now mammet you haue well behau'd
your selfe.

But you shall curse your coyneffe if I liue :
Who's within there ? see you conuey your mistris
Straight to th' old Ford, Ile keepe you straite enough,
Fore God I would haue fworne the puling girle
Would willingly accepted *Hammons* loue ;
But banish him my thoughts, go minion in.

Exit Rose.

Now tell me master *Scot*, would you haue thought
That master *Symon Eyre* the Shoomaker
Had beene of wealth to buy fuch merchandize ?

Scot. 'Twas well my Lord, your honour, and my
selfe,

Grew partners with him, for your billes of lading
Shew that *Eyres* gaines in one commoditie
Rise at the least to full three thousand pound,
Besides like gaine in other merchandize.

L. Ma. Well, he shall spend some of his thousands
now.

For I haue sent for him to the Guild Hall,

Enter Eyre.

See where he comes : good morrow master *Eyre*.

Eyre. Poore *Simon Eyre*, my Lord, your shoo-
maker.

L. Ma. Well well, it likes your felfe to terme you fo,

Enter Dodger.

Now *M. Dodger*, whats the newes with you ?

Dodg. Ide gladly speake in priuate to your Honor.

L. Ma. You shall, you shall : maister *Eyre*, and *M.*

Scot,

I haue some bufineffe with this gentleman,

I pray let me intreat you to walke before

To the Guild hall, Ile follow prefently,

Maister *Eyre*, I hope ere noone to call you Sherife.

Eyre. I would not care (my Lord) if you might call me king of Spaine, come maister *Scot*.

L. Ma. Now maister *Dodger*, what's the newes you bring ?

Dod. The Earle of Lincolne by me greets your Lordship,

And earnestly requests you (if you can)

Informe him where his nephew *Lacy* keepes.

L. Ma. Is not his nephew *Lacy* now in France ?

Dod. No I assure your Lordship, but disguif'd Lurkes here in London.

L. Ma. London ? ist euen so ?

It may be ; but vpon my faith and soule,

I know not where he liues, or whether he liues,

So tell my Lord of Lincolne : lurke in London ?

Well maister *Dodger*, you perhaps may start him,

Be but the meanes to rid him into France,

Ile giue you a dozen angells for your paines,

So much I loue his honor, hate his nephew,

And prethee so informe thy Lord from me.

Dodger. I take my leaue. *Exit Dodger.*

L. Ma. Farewell good maister *Dodger*.

Lacie in London ? I dare payne my life,

My daughter knowes thereof, and for that cause,

Denied young Maister *Hammon* in his loue,

Well, I am glad I sent her to old Forde,

Gods Lord tis late, to Guild Hall I must hie,

I know my Brethren stay my companie. (2) *Exit.*

(2) lacke my companie. 1631.

Enter Firke, Eyres wife, Hans and Roger.

Wife. Thou goest too fast for me *Roger*. O *Firke*.

Firke. I forfooth.

Wife. I pray thee run (doe you heare) run to Guild Hall, and learne if my husband master *Eyre* will take that worshipfull vocation of M. Sherife vpon him, hie thee good *Firke*.

Firke. Take it! well I goe, and he should not take it, *Firke* sweares to forweare him, yes forfooth I goe to Guild Hall.

Wife. Nay when? th'art two compendious and tedious.

Firke. O rare, your excellence if full of eloquence, how like a new Cart wheele my dame speakes, and she lookes like an old mustie Ale-bottle going to calding.

Wife. Nay when? thou wilt make me melancholy.

Firke. God forbid your Worship should fall into that humour, I run. *Exit.*

Wife. Let me see now *Roger* and *Hans*.

Ro. I forfooth dame, (mistris I should say) but the old terme so stickes to the roofe of my mouth, I can hardly licke it off.

Wife. Euen what thou wilt good *Roger*, Dame is a faire name for any honest Christian, but let that passe, how dost thou *Hans*?

Hans. Me tanck you vro.

Wife. Well *Hans* and *Roger*, you see God hath blest your maister, and perdie if euer he come to be M. Sherife of London, (as we are all mortall) you shall see, I will haue some odde thing or other in a corner for you, I will not bee your backe friend, but let that passe, *Hans*, pray thee tye my shoe.

Hans. Yaw ic fal vro.

Wife. *Roger*, thou knowest the length of my foote, as it is none of the biggest, so I thanke God it is handsome enough, prethee let me haue a paire of shooes made, Corke good *Roger*, woodden heele too.

Hodge. You shall.

Wife. Art thou acquainted with neuer a Fardingale-maker, nor a French-hood maker, I must enlarge my bumme, ha, ha, ha, how shall I looke in a hood I wonder! perdie odly I thinke.

Roger. As a Cat out of a Pillory, very wel I warrant you Mistrisse.

Wife. Indeed all flesh is grasse, and *Roger*, canst thou tell where I may buy a good haire?

Roger. Yes forsooth, at the Poulterers in Gracious streete.

Wife. Thou art an vngracious wag, perdye, I meane a false haire for my perewig.

Roger. Why Mistris, the next time that I cut my beard, you shall have the shauings of it, but mine are all true haire.

Wife. It is very hot, I must get me a fan or else a maske.

Roger. So you had need to hide your wicked face.

Wife. Fie vpon it, how costly this world's calling, is, perdie, but that it is one of the wonderfull workes of God, I would not deal with it: is not *Firke* come yet? *Hans*, be not so sad, let it passe and vanish as my husbands worship saies.

→ *Hans.* Ick bin vrolicke, lot see you foo.

Roger. Mistris, will you drinke a pipe of Tobacco?

Wife. O fie vpon it *Roger*, perdy, these filthy Tobacco pipes are the most idle slaueing bables that euer I felt: out vpon it, God blese vs, men looke not like men that vse them.

Enter Raph being lame.

Roger. What fellow *Raph*? Mistrisse looke heere *Janes* husband: why how now, lame? *Hans* make much of him, hee's a brother of our Trade, a good workeman, and a tall Souldier.

✓ *Hans.* You be welcome broder.

Wife. Pardie I knew him not, now dost thou good *Raph*?

I am glad to see thee well.

Raph. I would God you saw me dame as well
As when I went from London into France.

Wife. Trust mee I am forrie *Raph* to see thee
impotent, Lord how the warres haue made him Sun-
burnt: the left leg is not well, 'twas a faire gift of
God, the infirmitie took not hold a little higher,
considering thou camst from France, but let that passe.

Raph. I am glad to see you well, and I rejoyce
To heare that God hath blest my master so
Since my departure.

Wife. Yea truely *Raph*, I thanke my maker: but
let that passe.

Roger. And firra *Raph*, what news, what news in
France?

Raph. Tell me good *Roger* first what newes in
England?

How does my *Jane*? when didst thou see my wife?
Where liues my poore heart? sheele be poore indeed,
Now I want limbs to get whereon to feed.

Rog. Limbes? hast thou not hands man? thou
shalt neuer see a shoemaker want bread, though he
haue but three fingers on a hand.

Raph. Yet all this while I heare not of my *Jane*.

Wife. O *Raph* your wife, perdie wee know not
what's become of her: she was here a while, and
because she was married, grew more stately than
became her, I checkt her, and so forth, away she flung,
neuer returned, nor said bih nor bah: and *Raph* you
know, ka me, ka thee, And so as I tell ye, *Roger* is
not *Firke* come yet?

Roger. No forfooth.

Wife. And so indeed we heard not of her, but I
heare shee liues in London: but let that passe. If
thee had wanted, thee might haue opened her case
to me or my husband, or to any of my men, I am
sure there is not any of them perdie, but would haue
done her good to his power. *Hans*, looke if *Firke*
bee come.

Hans. Yaw ic sal vro.

Exit Hans.

Wife. And so as I said : but *Raph*, why dost thou weepe ? thou knowest that naked we came out of our mothers womb, and naked we must returne, and therefore thanke God for all things.

Roger. No faith, *Jane* is a stranger heere, but *Raph* pull vp a good heart, I know thou hast one, thy wife man is in London, one told me he saw her a while agoe very braue and neat, wee'le ferret her out, and London hold her.

Wife. Alas poore soule, hee's ouercome with sorrow, he does but as I doe, weepe for the losse of any good thing : but *Raph*, get thee in, call for some meat and drink, thou shalt find me worshipfull towards thee.

Raph. I thanke you dame, since I want limbs and lands,

Ile trust to God, my good friends, and to my hands. (3)

Exit.

Enter Hans and Firke running.

Firke. Runne good *Hans*, O *Hodge*, O Mistris ; *Hodge* heaue vp thine eares, mistresse smugge vp your lookes, on with your best apparell, my master is chofen, my master is called, nay condemned by the cry of the Countrie to be sherife of the Citie, for this famous yeare now to come : and time now being, a great many men in black gownes were aikt for their voices, and their hands, and my master had all their fists about his eares presently, and they cried I, I, I, I, and so I came away, wherefore without all other grieue, I doe salute you mistris Shrieue.

Hans. Yaw, my meester is de groot man, de Shrieue.

Roger. Did not I tell you Mistris, now I may boldly say, good morrow to your worship.

Wife. Good morrow good *Roger*, I thanke you my good people all, *Firke*, hold vp thy hand, heer's a three pennie peece for thy tydings.

(3) Ile to God, my good friends, and to these my hands.

1600—1610.

Firk. Tis but three halfe pence, I think : yes, tis three pence, I fmell the Rose.

Hodge. But Mistris, be rul'd by me, and do not speake so pulingly.

Firk. Tis her worship speakes so and not she, no faith mistris speake mee in the old key, to it *Firke*, there good *Firke*, ply your businesse *Hodge, Hodge* with a full mouth : Ile fill your bellies with good cheare till they cry twang.

Enter Simon Eyre wearing a gold chaine.

Hans. See mine lieuer broder, heere comt my meester.

Wife. Welcome home maister Shrieue, I pray God continue you in health and wealth.

Eyre. See here my *Maggy*, a Chaine, a gold Chaine for *Simon Eyre*, I shall make thee a lady, heere's a French hood for thee, on with it, on with it, dresse thy browes with this flap of a shoulder of mutton, to make thee looke louely : where be my fine men ? *Roger*, Ile make ouer my shop and tooles to thee : *Firk*, thou shalt be the foreman : *Hans*, thou shalt haue an hundred for twenty, be as mad knaues as your maister *Sim Eyre* hath beene, and you shall liue to be Sherifes of London : how dost thou like mee *Margerie* ? Prince am I none, yet am I princely borne, *Firke, Hodge*, and *Hans*.

All 3. I forsooth, what fayes your worship mistris Sherife ?

Eyre. Worship and honour ye Babilonian knaues, for the Gentle Craft : but I forgot my selfe, I am bidden by my Lord Maior to dinner to old Foord, hees gone before, I must after : come Madge, on with your trinkets : now my true Troians, my fine *Firke*, my dapper *Hodge*, my honest *Hans*, some deuice, some odde crochets, some morris, or such like, for the honour of the gentle Shoo-makers, meet mee at old Foord, you know my mind : come Madge,

away, shut vp the shop knaues, and make Holi-
day.

Exeunt.

Firke. O rare, O braue, come *Hodge*, follow me
Hans,
Wee'le be with them for a Morris dance. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Lord Maior, Eyre, his wife in a French hood,
Sibill and other Seruants.*

L. Maior. Trust me you are as welcome to old
Foord, as I myfelfe.

Wife. Truely, I thanke your Lordship.

L. Maior. Would our bad cheere were worth
the thankes you giue.

Eyre. Good cheere my Lord Maior, fine cheere, a
fine houle, fine walles, all fine and neat.

L. Ma. Now by my troth, Ile tell thee maister
Eyre,

It does me good and all my Brethren,
That fuch a mad-cap fellow as thy felfe
Is entred into our focietie.

Wife. I but my Lord hee muft learne now to
put on grauitie.

Eyre. Peace *Maggy*, a fig for grauitie, when I goe
to Guild Hall in my Scarlet gowne, i'le looke as de-
murely as a Saint, and fpeake as grauely as a Iuftice
of Peace, but now I am here at old Foord, at my
good Lord Maiors houle, let it goe by, vanifh
Maggy, i'le be merrie, away with flip flap, thefe
fooleries, thefe gulleries: what hunny? Prince am I
none, yet am I Princely borne: what fayes my Lord
Maior?

L. Ma. Ha, ha, ha, I had rather than a thoufand
pound,

I had an heart but halfe fo light as yours.

Eyre. Why what should I doe my Lord? a pound
of care payes not a dram of debt: hum, let's be
merrie whiles wee are young, old Age, facke and fugar
will fleale vpon vs ere we be aware.

L. Ma. Its well done, Mistris *Eyre*, pray giue good counsell to my daughter.

Wife. I hope mistris *Rose* will haue the grace to take nothing that's bad.

L. Ma. Pray God she doe, for ifaith mistris *Eyre*, I would bestow vpon that peeuissh girle
A thousand markes more than I meane to giue her,
Upon condition shee'd be rul'd by me.
The Ape still croffeth me : there came of late
A proper gentleman of faire reuenewes,
Whom gladly I would call Sonne in law :
But my fine Cockney would haue none of him,
Youle proue a Cockscombe for it ere you die,
A Courtier or no man must please your eye.

Eyre. Bee rul'd sweet *Rose*, th'art ripe for a man :
marrie not with a boy that has no more haire on his
face than thou hast on thy cheekes : a Courtier, wash,
goe by, stand not vpon pishery passerie ; those silken
fellowes are but painted Images, outfides, outfides
Rose, their inner linings are torne : no my fine mouse,
marrie me with a Gentleman Grocer like my Lord
Maior your father, a Grocer is a sweet trade, plums,
plums : had I a sonne or daughter should marrie out
of the generation and blood of the shoemakers, he
should pack : what, the gentle trade is a liuing for a
man through Europe, through the world.

A noyse within of a Taber and a Pipe.

L. Ma. What noyse is this ?

Eyre. O my Lord Maior, a crue of good fellowes
that for loue to your honour, are come hither with a
Morrifdance ; come in my Mesopotamians cheerily.

Enter Hodge, Hans, Raph, Firke, and other Shoemakers in a morris : after a little dancing the Lord Maior speaks.

L. Ma. Maister *Eyre*, are all these Shoemakers ?

Eyre. All Cordwainers my good Lord Maior.

Rose. How like my *Lacie* lookes yond Shoemaker.

Hans. O that I durst but speake vnto my loue !

L. Ma. *Sibill*, go fetch some wine to make these drinke,

You are all welcome.

All. We thanke your Lordship.

Rose takes a cup of wine and goes to *Hans*.

Rose. For his sake whose faire shape thou representst,

Good friend I drinke to thee.

✓ *Hans.* Ic be dancke good frister.

Eyres Wife. I see mistris *Rose* you do not want iudgement, you haue drunke to the properest man I keepe.

Firke. Here be some haue done their parts to be as proper as he.

L. Ma. Well, vrgent bufinesse cals me backe to London :

Good fellowes, first go in and tast our cheare,
And to make merrie as you homeward goe,
Spend these two angels in beere at Stratford Boe.

Eyre. To these two (my mad lads) *Sim. Eyre* addes another, then cheerily *Firke*, tickle it *Hans*, and all for the honour of Shoomakers.

All go dancing out.

L. Ma. Come maister *Eyre*, let's haue your company. *Exeunt.*

Rose. *Sibill*, what shall I doe ?

Sibil. Why whats the matter ?

Rose. That *Hans* the shoo-maker is my loue *Lacy*, Disguisd in that attire to find me out,
How should I find the meanes to speake with him ?

Sib. What mistris, neuer feare, I dare venter my maidenhead to nothing, and thats great oddes, that *Hans* the Dutchman when we come to London, shall not onely see and speake with you, but in spight of all your Fathers pollicies, steale you away and marrie you, will not this please you ?

Rose. Do this, and euer be assured of my loue.

Sibil. Away then, and follow your father to London, lest your absence cause him to suspect something :

To morrow if my counsell be obaide,
Ile bind you prentife to the gentle trade.

*Enter Iane in a Semsters shop working, and Hammon
muffled at another doore, he stands aloofe.*

Ham. Yonders the shop, and there my faire loue
fits,

Shes faire and louely, but she is not mine.
O would she were, thrice haue I courted her,
Thrice hath my hand beene moistned with her hand,
Whilst my poore famisht eyes do feed on that
Which made them famish : I am infortunate,
I still loue one, yet no bodie loues me,
I muse in other men what women see,
That I so want ! fine mistris *Rose* was coy,
And this too curious, oh no, she is chaste,
And for she thinkes me wanton, she denies
To cheare my cold heart with her funny eyes,
How prettily she workes, oh prettie hand !
Oh happie worke, it doth me good to stand
Unseene to see her, thus I oft haue stood,
In frosty euenings, a light burning by her,
Enduring biting cold, only to eye her,
One onely looke hath seem'd as rich to me
As a Kings crowne, such is loues lunacie :
Muffled Ile passe along, and by that try
Whether she know me.

Fane. Sir, what ist you buy ?
What ist you lacke sir ? callico, or lawne,
Fine cambricke shirts, or bands, what will you buy ?

Ham. That which thou wilt not sell, faith yet ile
trie :

How do you sell this handkercher ?

Fane. Good cheape.

Ham. And how these ruffes ?

Fane. Cheape too.

Ham. And how this band ?

Fane. Cheape too.

Ham. All cheape, how sell you then this hand ?

Fane. My hands are not to be fold.

Ham. To be giuen then, nay faith I come to buy.

Fane. But none knowes when.

Ham. Good sweet, leaue worke a little while, lets play.

Fane. I cannot liue by keeping holliday.

Ham. Ile pay you for the time which shall be lost.

Fane. With me you shall not be at so much cost.

Ham. Looke how you wound this cloth, so you wound me.

Fane. It may be so.

Ham. Tis so.

Fane. What remedy?

Ham. Nay faith you are too coy.

Fane. Let go my hand.

Ham. I will do any taske at your command,

I would let go this beautie, were I not

In mind to disobey you by a power

That controules Kings : I loue you.

Fane. So, now part.

Ham. With hands I may, but neuer with my heart,

In faith I loue you.

Fane. I beleeeue you doe.

Ham. Shall a true loue in mee breed hate in you?

Fane. I hate you not.

Ham. Then you must loue.

Fane. I doe, what are you better now? I loue not you.

Ham. All this I hope is but a womans fray,

That meanes come to me, when she cries, away :

In earnest mistris I do not iest,

A true chast loue hath entred in my brest,

I loue you dearely as I doe my life,

I loue you as a husband loues a wife,

That, and no other loue my loue requires,

Thy wealth I know is little, my desires

Thirst not for gold, sweet beautilous *Fane* what's mine,

Shall (if thou make my selfe thine) all be thine,

Say, iudge, what is thy sentence, life, or death ?
 Mercy or crueltie lies in thy breath.

Fane. Good sir I do beleeeue you loue me well :
 For tis a feely conquest, feely pride,
 For one like you (I mean a gentleman)
 To boast, that by his loue tricks he hath brought,
 Such and such women to his amorous lure :
 I thinke you do not so, yet many doe,
 And make it euen a very trade to wooe,
 I could be coy, as many women be,
 Feed you with sun-shine smiles, and wanton lookes,
 But I detest witch-craft ; say that I
 Doe constantly beleeeue you, constant haue.

Ham. Why dost thou not beleeeue me ?

Fane. I beleeeue you,
 But yet good sir, because I will not greeue you,
 With hopes to taste fruit which will neuer fall,
 In simple truth this is the summe of all,
 My husband liues, at least I hope he liues,
 Prest was he to these bitter warres in France,
 Bitter they are to me by wanting him,
 I haue but one heart, and that heart's his due,
 How can I then bestow the same on you ?
 Whilest he liues, his I liue, be it neere to poore,
 And rather be his wife, than a kings whore.

Ham. Chast and deare woman, I will not abuse
 thee,

Although it cost my life, if thou refuse me,
 Thy husband prest for France, what was his name ?

Fane. *Rafe Dampport.*

Ham. *Dampport*, heres a letter sent
 From France to me, from a deare friend of mine,
 A gentleman of place, here he doth write,
 Their names that haue beene slaine in euery fight.

Fane. I hope deaths scroll containes not my
 loues name.

Ham. Can you not read ?

Fane. I can.

Ham. Peruse the same.

To my remembrance such a name I read
Amongst the rest ; see here.

Fane. Aye me, hee's dead,
Hee's dead, if this be true my deare hearts flaine.

Ham. Haue patience, deare loue.

Fane. Hence, hence.

Ham. Nay sweet *Fane*,

Make not poore sorrow pround with these rich teares,
I mourne thy husbands death because thou mournt.

Fane. That bill is forged, tis signed by forgerie.

Ham. Ile bring thee letters sent besides to many
Carrying the like report : *Fane* tis too true,
Come, weep not : mourning though it rise from loue,
Helpes not the mourned, yet hurts them that mourne.

Fane. For Gods sake leaue me.

Ham. Whither dost thou turne ?

Forget the dead, loue them that are aliue.
His loue is faded, trie how mine will thriue.

Fane. Tis now no time for me to think on loue.

Ham. Tis now best time for you to thinke on loue,
because your loue liues not.

Fane. Though he be dead, my loue to him shal
not be buried :

For Gods sake leaue me to my selfe alone.

Ham. T'would kill my soule to leave thee drown'd
in mone :

Answer me to my sute, and I am gone,
Say to me, yea, or no.

Fane. No.

Ham. Then farewell : one farewell will not serue.
I come againe, come drie these wet cheekes,
tell me faith sweete Jane, yea, or no, once more.

Fane. Once more I say no, once more begone
I pray, else will I goe.

Ham. Nay then I will grow rude by this white
hand,

Untill you change that cold no, here ile stand,
Till by your hard heart.

Fane. Nay for Gods loue peace,

My sorrowes by your prefence more increafe,
 Not that you thus are present, but all grieffe
 Desires to be alone, therefore in brieve
 Thus much I say, and saying bid adew,
 If euer I wed man it shall be you.

Ham. Oh blessed voice, deare *Fane*, ile urge no
 more,

Thy breath hath made me rich.

Fane. Death makes me poore.

Exit.

*Enter Hodge at his shop boord, Rafe, Firke, Hans,
 and a boy at worke.*

All. Hey downe, a downe dery.

Hodge. Well said my hearts, plie your worke to
 day, wee loytred yesterday, to it pell mell, that we
 may lue to be Lord Maiors, or Aldermen at least.

Firke. Hey downe a downe dery.

Hodge. Well said ifaith, how saist thou *Hans*, doth
 not *Firke* tickle it ?

Hans. Yaw mester.

Firke. Not so neither, my organe pipe squeaks
 this morning forwant of licoring : hey downe a downe
 dery.

Hans. Forward *Firke*, tow best vn iolly yongster hort
 I mester ic bid yo cut me vn paire vanpres vor mester
 iffres boots.

Hodge. Thou shalt *Hans*.

Firke. Maister.

Hodge. How now, boy ?

Firke. Pray, now you are in the cutting vaine, cut
 me out a paire of counterfeits, or else my worke will
 not passe currant, hey downe a downe.

Hod. Tell me firs, are my cozen *M. Priscillaes*
 shooes done ?

Firke. Your cozen ? no master, one of your aunts,
 hang her, let them alone.

Rafe. I am in hand with them, she gaue charge
 that none but I should do them for her.

Firke. Thou do for her ? then twill be but a lame

doing, and that she loues not : *Rafe*, thou might'st haue sent her to me, in faith I would haue yearkt and firkt your *Priscilla*, hey downe a downe dery, this geere will not hold.

Hodge. How saist thou *Firke* ? were we not merry at Old-Ford ?

Firke. How merry ? why our buttockes went liggy ioggy like a quagmire : well fir Roger Oatemeale, if I thought all meate of that nature, I would eate nothing but Bag puddings.

Raph. Of all good fortunes, my fellow *Hans* had the best.

Firke. Tis true, becaufe mistris *Rose* dranke to him.

Hodge. Well, well, worke apace, they say seuen of the Aldermen be dead, or very sick.

Firke. I care not, ile be none.

Rafe. No nor I, but then my M. *Eyre* will come quickly to be L. Maior.

Enter Sibill.

Firke. Whoope, yonder comes *Sibill*.

Hodge. *Sibill*, welcome ifaith, and how dost thou madde wench ?

Firke. *Sib* whoore, welcome to London.

Sibill. Godamercy sweet *Firke* : good Lord, *Hodge*, what a delicious shop you haue got, you tickle it ifaith.

Rafe. God a mercy *Sibill* for our good cheere at old Ford.

Sibill. That you shall haue *Rafe*.

Firke. Nay by the masse, we had tickling cheere *Sibill*, and how the plague dost thou and mistris *Rose*, and my L. Maior ? I put the women in first.

Sibill. Well Godamercy : but gods me, I forget my selfe, where's *Hans* the Flemming ?

Firke. Hearke butter-boxe, now you must yelp out some sprenken.

Hans. Vat begaie gon vat vod gon Frister.

52 *A pleasant Comedie of*

Sibill. Marry you must come to my young mistress, to pull on her shooes you made last.

Hans. Var ben your egle fro, vare ben your mistress?

Sibill. Marrie here at our London house in Cornhill.

Firke. Will no bodie serue her turne but *Hans*?

Sibill. No fir, come *Hans* I stand vpon needles.

Hod. Why then *Sibill*, take heed of pricking.

Sibill. For that let me alone, I haue a trick in my budget, come *Hans*.

Hans. Yaw, yaw ic fall meete yo gane.

Exit Hans and Sibill.

Hodge. Goe *Hans*, make hast againe: come, who lackes worke?

Firke. I master, for I lacke my breakefast, tis munching time, and past.

Hodge. Ist so, why then leaue worke *Raph*, to breakefast, boy looke to the tooles, come *Rafe*, come

Firke.

Exeunt.

Enter a Seruingman.

Ser. Let me see now, the signe of the Last in Towerstreet, mas yonders the house: what haw, whoes within?

Enter Rafe.

Rafe. Who calls there, what want you fir?

Ser. Marrie I would haue a paire of shooes made for a Gentlewoman against to morrow morning, what, can you do them?

Rafe. Yes fir, you shall hane them, but what length's her foote?

Ser. Why, you must make them in all parts like this shooe, but at any hand faile not to do them, for the Gentlewoman is to be married very early in the morning.

Rafe. How? by this shooe must it be made? by this? are you fure fir by this?

Ser. How, by this am I fure, by this? art thou in thy wits? I tell thee I must haue a paire of shooes, dost thou marke me? a paire of shooes, two shooes, made by this very shooe, this same shooe, against to morrow morning by foure a clocke, dost vnderstand me, canst thou do it?

Rafe. Yes fir, yes, I, I, I can do't, by this shooe you say: I should know this shooe? yes fir, yes, by this shooe, I can do't, foure a clocke, well, whither shall I bring them?

Ser. To the signe of the golden ball in Watling-street, enquire for one maister *Hammon*, a Gentleman, my maister.

Raph. Yea fir, by this shooe you say.

Ser. I say maister *Hammon* at the golden Ball, hee's the Bride-groome, and those shooes are for his bride.

Raph. They shall be done by this shooe; well, well, maister *Hammon* at the gold shooe, I would say the golden Ball, wel, very well, but I pray you fir, where must maister *Hammon* be married?

Ser. At Saint *Faith's* Church vnder *Paules*: but what's that to thee? prethee dispatch those shooes, and so farewell. *Exit.*

Raph. By this shooe said he, how am I amazd At this strange accident? vpon my life, This was the very shooe I gaue my wife When I was prest for France; since when, alas, I neuer could heare of her. 'Tis the same, And *Hammons* bride no other than my *Jane*.

Enter Firke.

Firke. *Snailles Raph* thou hast lost thy part of three pots, a countrieman of mine gaue me to breakefast.

Raph. I care not, I haue found a better thing.

Firke. A thing? away; is it a mans thing or a womans thing?

Raph. *Firke*, dost thou know this shooe?

Firke. No by my troth, neither doth that know me: I haue no acquaintance with it, tis a meere stranger to me.

Raph. Why then I doe; this shooe I durst be sworne

Once couered the instep of my *Fane*:

This is her size, her breadth, thus trod my loue,

These true-loue knots I prickt, I hold my life,

By this old shooe I shall find out my wife.

Firke. Ha, ha old shooe that wert new, how a murren came this ague fit of foolishnesse vpon thee?

Raph. Thus *Firke* euen now here came a seruing-man,

By this shooe would he haue a new paire made,

Against to morrow morning for his mistris,

That's to be married to a gentleman,

And why may not this be my sweet *Fane*?

Firke. And why maiest not thou be my sweet *Asse*?
ha, ha.

Raph. Well, laugh and spare not, but the truth is this,

Against to morrow morning Ile prouide

A lusty crew of honest shoemakers,

To watch the going of the bride to Church:

If she proue *Fane*, Ile take her in dispite

Of *Hammon* and the Deuill, were he by,

If it be not my *Fane*, what remedy?

Hereof I am sure, I shall liue till I die,

Although I neuer with a woman lie.

Firke. Thou lie with a woman to build nothing but Cripplegates? Well God sends fooles fortune, and it may be hee may light vpon his matrimony by such a deuice, for wedding and hanging goes by destinie.

Exit.

Enter Hans and Rose arme in arme.

Hans. How happie am I by embracing thee,
O I did feare such crosse mishaps did raigne,
That I should neuer see my *Rose* againe.

Rose. Sweet *Lacy*, since faire opportunitie,
Offers her selfe to further our escape,
Let not too ouer-fond esteeme of me,
Hinder that happie houre, inuent the meanes,
And *Rose* will follow thee through all the world.

Hans. Oh how I furett with excesse of ioy,
Made happie by thy rich perfection :
But since thou payst sweet interest to my hopes,
Redoubling loue on loue, let me once more
Like to a bold-fac'd debtor craue of thee,
This night to steale abroad, and at *Eyres* house,
Who now by death of certaine Aldermen,
Is Maior of London, and my maister once,
Meete thou thy *Lacy*, where in spight of change,
Your fathers anger, and mine vncles hate,
Our happy nuptials will we consummate.

Enter Sibil.

Sibil. Oh God, what will you do mistris ? shift for
your selfe, your father is at hand, hee's comming, hee's
comming, master *Lacy* hide your selfe in my mistris,
for Gods sake shift for your selues.

Hans. Your father come, sweet *Rose*, what shall I
doe ?

Where shall I hide me ? how shall I escape ?

Rose. A man, and want wit in extremitie,
Come come, be *Hans* still, play the shoemaker,
Pull on my shooe.

Enter Lord Maior.

Hans. Mas and that's well remembred.

Sibil. Here comes your father.

Hans. For ware metresse, 'tis vn good skow, it fall
vel fute, or ye sal neit betallen.

Rose. O God it pincheth me, what will you do?

Hans. Your fathers presence pincheth, not the shoos.

L. Ma. Well done, fit my daughter well, and she shall please thee well.

✓ *Hans.* Yaw, yaw, ick weit dat well, for ware tis vn good skoo, tis gi mait van neits leither, se euer mine here.

Enter a Prentise.

L. Maior. I do beleue it, whats the newes with you?

Prent. Please you the Earle of Lincolne at the gate is newly lighted, and would speake with you.

L. Ma. The Earle of Lincolne come speake with me?

Well, well, I know his errand: daughter *Rose* Send hence your shoemaker, dispatch, haue done:

Sib make things handsome, fir boy follow me. *Exit.*

✓ *Hans.* Mine vncle come: O what may this portend?

Sweet *Rose*, this of our loue threatens an end.

Rose. Be not dismaid at this, what ere befall,

Rose is thine owne, to witnesse I speake truth, Where thou appoints the place, Ile meet with thee;

I will not fixe a day to follow thee,

{ But presently steale hence: do not replie,
Loue which gaue strength to beare my fathers hate,
Shall now adde wings to further our escape. *Exeunt.*

Enter Lord Maior and Lincolne.

L. Maior. Beleeue me on my credit I speake truth, Since first your nephew *Lacy* went to France, I haue not seene him: It seem'd strange to me, When *Dodger* told me that he staid behind, Neglecting the high charge the king imposed.

Lin. Trust me (fir *Roger Otley*) I did thinke Your counsell had giuen head to this attempt, Drawne to it by the loue he beares your child,

Here I did hope to find him in your house,
But now I see mine error, and confesse
My iudgement wrong'd you by conceiuing so.

L. Ma. Lodge in my house, say you? trust me my
Lord,

I loue your nephew Lacy too too dearely,
So much to wrong his honour : and he hath done so,
That first gaue him aduice to staie from France.
To witnesse I speake truth, I let you know
How carefull I haue beene to keepe my daughter
Free from all conference or speech of him,
Not that I scorne your nephew, but in loue
I beare your honor, lest your noble blood,
Should by my meane worth be dishonoured.

Linc. How far the churles tongue wanders from
his heart,

Well, well sir *Roger Otley*, I beleue you,
With more than many thanks for the kind loue,
So much you seeme to beare me : but my Lord,
Let me request your helpe to seeke my nephew,
Whom if I find, i'll straight imbarke for France ;
So shall your Rose be free, my thoughts at rest,
And much care die which now lies in my brest.

Enter Sibill.

Sibill. O Lord, helpe for Gods sake my mistris,
Oh my young mistris.

L. Ma. Where is thy mistris? what's become of
her?

Sibill. Shee's gone, shee's fled.

L. Ma. Gone? whither is she fled?

Sibill. I know not forsooth, shee's fled out of doores
with *Hans* the Shoemaker, I saw them scud, scud,
scud, apace, apace.

L. Ma. Which waie? what *John*? where be my
men? which waie?

Sibill. I know not and it please your worship.

L. Ma. Fled with a shoemaker, can this be true?

Sibil. O Lord fir, as true as you are L. Maior.(4)

Lin. Her loue turned shoemaker, I am glad of this.

L. Ma. A Flemming butter-boxe, a shoemaker.

Will she forget her birth? requite my care
With such ingratitude? scorn'd she young *Hammen*,
To loue a honnikin, a needy knaue?
Well let her flie, ile not flie after her,
Let her starue if she will, thee's none of mine.

Lin. Be not so cruell fir.

Enter Firke with shoes.

Sibill. I am glad thee's scapt.

L. Ma. Ile not account of her as of my child,
Was there no better obiekt for her eyes,
But a foule drunken lubbery swill-bellie,
A shoemaker, that's braue.

Firke. Yea forfooth 'tis a verie braue shooe, and
as fit as a pudding.

L. Ma. How now, what knaue is this, from whence
commeest thou?

Firke. No knaue fir, I am *Firke* the shoemaker,
lustie *Rogers* chiefe lusty journey-man, and I come
hither to take vp the prettie legge of sweet mistris
Rose, and thus hoping your worship is in as good
health as I was at the making hereof, I bid you fare-
well, yours

Firke.

L. Ma. Stay, stay, fir knaue.

Lin. Come hither shoemaker.

Firke. Tis happie the knaue is put before the
shoemaker, or else I would not haue vouchsafed to
come backe to you, I am moued, for I stirre.

L. Ma. My Lord, this villaine calls vs knaues by
craft.

Firke. Then 'tis by the Gentle Craft, and to call
one knaue gently is no harme: fit your worship
merrie: *Sib* your young mistris. I'le so bob them,
now my maister M. *Eyre* is Lord Maior of London.

L. Ma. Tell me firra, whose man are you ?

Firke. I am glad to see your worship so merrie, I haue no maw to this geere, no stomacke as yet to a red petticoat.

Pointing to Sibyl.

Lin. He meanes not fir to wooe you to his maid, But onely doth demand whose man you are.

Firke. I sing now to the tune of Rogero, Roger my fellow is now my maister.

Lin. Sirra knowst thou one *Hans* a shoemaker ?

Fir. *Hans* Shoemaker, oh yes, flay, yes I haue him, I tell you what, I speake it in secret, mistris *Rose* and he are by this time, no not so, but shortly are to come ouer one another, with Can you dance the shaking of the sheets ? it is that *Hans*, Ile so gull these diggers.

L. Ma. Knowst thou then where he is ?

Firke. Yes forfooth, yea marry.

Lin. Canst thou in sadnesse ?

Firke. No forfooth, no marry.

L. Ma. Tell me good honest fellow where he is, And thou shalt see what Ile bestow of thee.

Firke. Honest fellow, no sir, not so sir, my profession is the Gentle Craft, I care not for seeing, I loue feeling, let me feel it heere, *aurium tenus*, ten peeces of gold, *genuum tenus*, ten peeces of siluer, and then *Firke* is your man in a new paire of stretchers.

L. Ma. Here is an angell, part of thy reward, Which I will giue thee, tell me where he is.

Firke. No point, shall I betray my brother ? no, shal I proue *Fudas* to *Hans* ? no ; shal I crie treason to my corporation ? no, I shall be firkt and yerkt then, but giue me your angell, your angell shall tell you.

Lin. Doe so good fellow, 'tis no hurt to thee.

Firke. Send simpring *Sib* away.

Exit Sib.

L. Ma. Hufwife get you in.

Firke. Pitchers haue eares, and maids haue wide mouthes : but for *Hans* praunce, vpon my word to morrow morning hee and young mistris *Rose* goe to this geere, they shall be married together by this rush,

or else turne *Firk* to a firkin of butter to tan leather withall.

L. Ma. But art thou fure of this ?

Firke. Am I fure that Paules-steeple is a handfull higher than London stone ? or that the pissing Conduit leaks nothing but pure mother Bunch ? am I fure I am lusty *Firk* ? Gods nailes do you thinke I am so bafe to gull you ?

Lincolne. Where are they married ? dost thou know the Church ?

Firke. I neuer goe to Church, but I know the name of it, it is a swearing Church, stay a while, 'tis, I by the mas : no, no, tis I by my troth, no nor that, tis I by my faith, that that, tis I by my Faiths Church vnder Paules Crosse, there they shall bee knit like a paire of stockings in matrimony, there theyle be in cony.

Linc. Upon my life my Nephew *Lacy* walkes, In the disguise of this Dutch Shoomaker.

Firke. Yes forfooth.

Linc. Doth he not honest fellow ?

Firke. No forfooth I thinke *Hans* is no body but *Hans*, no spirit.

L. Ma. My mind misgiues me now tis so indeed.

Linc. My Cosen speaks the language, knowes the trade.

L. Ma. Let me request your company my Lord, Your honorable prefence may, no doubt, Refraine their head-strong rashnesse, when my selfe Going alone, perchance may be ore-borne : Shall I request this fauour ?

Lin. This, or what else.

Firke. Then you must rise betimes, for they meane to fall to their hey passe, and repasse, pindy pandy, which hand will you haue, very early.

L. Ma. My care shall euery way equall their hast, This night accept your lodging in my house, The earlier shal we stir, and at Saint Faiths Preuent this giddy hare-braind Nuptiall,

This trafficke of hot loue shall yeeld cold gaines,
They ban our loues and weelee forbid their baines.

Exit.

Lin. At Saint Faiths Church thou saist ?

Firk. Yes, by their troth.

Linc. Be secret on thy life.

Exit.

Firk. Yes when I kisse your wife, ha, ha, heres no craft in the Gentle Craft, I came hither of purpose with shooes to Sir Rogers worship, whilst Rose his daughter be cony-catcht by *Hans* : soft now, these two gullies wil be at Saint Faithes Church to morrow morning to take maister Bridegroom, and mistris Bride napping, and they in the meane time shall chop vp the matter at the Sauoy : but the best sport is, Sir *Roger Otley* will find my fellow lame *Raphs* wife going to marrie a Gentleman : and then heele stop her in stead of his Daughter ; O braue, there will bee fine tickling sport : soft now, what haue I to do ? O I know, now a messe of shoemakers meate at the Wooll-sacke in Iuy lane, to cozen my Gentleman of lame *Raphs* wife, that's true, alacke alacke, girles hold out tacke, for now smockes for this iumbling shall go to wracke.

Exit.

Enter Eyre, his wife, Hans and Rose.

Eyre. This is the morning then, stay my bully, my honest *Hans*, is it not ?

Hans. This is the morning that must make vs two happie or miserable, therefore if you—

Eyre. Away with these ifs and ands *Hans*, and these *&ceteras*, by mine honor *Rowland Lacy*, none but the king shall wrong thee : come feare nothing, am not I *Sim Eyre* ? Is not *Sim Eyre* Lord Maior of London ? feare nothing *Rose*, let them say all what they can, daintie come thou to mee, laughest thou ?

Wife. Good my Lord stand her friend in what thing you may.

Eyre. Why my sweete Ladie Madgy, thinke you *Simon Eyre* can forget his fine Dutch iourneyman ? No vah. Fie I scorne it, it shall neuer be cast in my

teeth, that I was vnthankfull. Lady *Madgy*, thou hadst neuer couered thy Saracens head with this French flappe, nor loaded thy bumme with this farthingale, tis trash, trumperie, vanitie, *Simon Eyre* had neuer walkt in a red petticoate, nor wore a chaine of Gold but for my fine Journeymans Portugues, and shall I leaue him? No: Prince am I none, yet beare a Princely minde.

Hans. My Lord, 'tis time to part from hence.

Eyre. Lady *Madgy*, Lady *Madgy*, take two or three of my Pie-crust eaters, my Buffe-ierkin varlets, that doe walke in blacke gownes at *Simon Eyres* heeles, take them good Ladie *Madgy*, trip and go, my browne Queene of Perriwigs, with my delicate *Rose*, and my iolly *Romland* to the Sauoy, see them linkt, countenance the marriage, and when it is done, cling cling together, you Hamborow Turtle Doues, Ile beare you out, come to *Simon Eyre*, come dwell with me *Hans*, thou shalt eate minc'd pies, and marchpane. *Rose*, away cricket, trip and goe, my Lady *Madgy* to the Sauoy. *Hans*, wed, and to bed, kisse and away, go vanish.

Wife. Farewell my Lord.

Rose. Make hast sweet loue.

Wife. Sheede faine the deed were done.

Hans. Come my sweet *Rose*, faster than Deere wee le run.

They goe out.

Eyre. Goe, vanish, vanish, anant I say: by the Lord of Ludgate, it's a mad life to be a Lord Maior, it's a stirring life, a fine life, a veluet life, a carefull life. Well *Simon Eyre*, yet set a good face on it, in the honour of Saint *Hugh*. Soft, the king this day comes to dine with me, to see my new buildings, his maiestie is welcome, hee shall haue good cheere, delicate cheere, princely cheere. This day my fellow prentices of London come to dine with me too, they shal haue fine cheere, gentlemanlike cheere. I promised the mad Cappadofians, when we all serued at the Conduit together, that if euer I came to bee

Maïor of London, I would feast them all, and i'le doot, i'le doot by the life of *Pharaoh*, by this beard *Sim Eyre* will be no flincher. Besides, I haue procured, that vpon euery Shrouetuesday at the found of the Pancake bell, my fine dapper Assirian lads shall clap vp their shop windowes, and away, this is the day, and this day they shall doot, they shall doot : boyes, that day are you free, let maisters care, and prentises shall pray for *Simon Eyre*.

Enter Hodge, Firke, Raph, and five or six Shoomakers, all with cudgels, or such weapons.

Hodge. Come *Rafe*, stand to it *Firke* : my masters, as wee are the braue bloods of the Shoomakers, heires apparant to Saint *Hugh*, and perpetuall benefactors to all good fellowes : thou shalt haue no wrong : were *Hammon* a King of Spades, he should not delue in thy close without thy sufferance : but tell me *Rafe*, art thou sure tis thy wife ?

Rafe. Am I sure this is *Firke* ? This morning when I strokt on her shooes, I lookt vpon her, and she vpon mee, and fighed, askt me if euer I knew one *Rafe*. Yes said I : for his sake said she (teares standing in her eyes) and for thou art somewhat like him, spend this peece of gold : I tooke it : my lame leg, and my trauell beyond sea made me vnknowne, all is one for that, I know's shee's mine.

Firke. Did shee giue thee this gold ? O glorious glittering gold : shees thine owne, tis thy wife, and shee loues thee, for Ile stand toot, there's no woman will giue gold to any man, but shee thinkes better of him than shee thinkes of them shee giues siluer to : and for *Hammon*, neither *Hammon* nor Hangman shall wrong thee in London : Is not our old Master *Eyre* Lord Maïor ? Speake my hearts.

All. Yes, and *Hammon* shall know it to his cost.

Enter Hammon his man, Fane, and others.

Hodge. Peace my bullies, yonder they come.

Rafe. Stand toot my hearts, *Firk*, let me speake first.

Hodge. No *Rafe*, let me : *Hammon*, whither away so earely ?

Ham. Unmannerly rude slaue, what's that to thee ?

Firk. To him sir ! yes sir, and to me, and others : good morrow *Fane*, how dost thou ? good Lord, how the world is changed with you, God be thanked.

Ham. Villaines, hands off, how dare you touch my loue ?

All. Villaines : downe with them, cry clubs for prentises.

Hod. Hold, my hearts : touch her *Hammon* ! yea and more than that, weele carrie her away with vs. My maisters and gentlemen, neuer draw your bird spits, shoemakers are steele to the backe, men euery inch of them, all spirit.

All of Hammons side. Well, and what of all this ?

Hod. Ile shew you : *Fane*, doost thou know this man ? tis *Rafe* I can tell thee : nay, tis he in faith, though he be lam'd by the warres, yet looke not strange, but run to him, fold him about the necke and kisse him.

Fane. Liues then my husband ? oh God let me go, Let me embrace my *Rafe*.

Ham. What meanes my *Fane* ?

Fane. Nay, what meant you to tell me was he slaine ?

Ham. Pardon me deare loue for being misled, Twas rumord here in London thou wert dead.

Firke. Thou seest he liues : Lasse, go packe home with him ! now M. *Hammon*, wheres your mistris your wife ?

Seru. Swounds M. fight for her, will you thus lose her ?

All. Downe with that creature, clubs, downe with him.

Hodge. Hold, hold.

Ham. Hold foole : firs he shall do no wrong,

Will my *Fane* leaue me thus, and breake her faith ?

Firke. Yes sir, she must sir, she shall sir, what then ? mend it.

Hod. Hearke fellow *Rafe*, follow my counsell, set the wench in the midst, and let her chuse her man, and let her be his woman.

Fane. Whom should I chuse ? whom should my thoughts affect ?

But him whom Heauen hath made to be my loue,
Thou art my husband, and these humble weedes,
Makes thee more beautifull than all his wealth,
Therefore I will but put off his attire,
Returning it into the owners hand,
And euer after be thy constant wife.

Hodge. Not a ragge *Fane*, the law's on our side, hee that fowes in another mans ground forfeits his haruest, get thee home *Raph*, follow him *Fane*, hee shall not haue so much as a buske point from thee.

Firke. Stand to that *Rafe*, the appurtenances are thine owne, *Hammon*, looke not at her.

Seru. O swounds no.

Firke. Blew coate be quiet, wee le giue you a new liuerie else, wee le make Shroue Tuesday Saint *Georges* day for you : looke not *Hammon*, leare not, Ile firke you, for thy head now, one glance, one sheepes eye, any thing at her, touch not a ragge, lest I and my brethren beate you to clowtes.

Ser. Come maister *Hammon*, theres no striuing here.

Ham. Good fellowes, heare me speake : and honest

Rafe,

Whom I haue iniured most by louing *Fane*,
Marke what I offer thee : here in faire gold,
Is twentie pound, Ile giue it for thy *Fane*,
If this content thee not, thou shalt haue more.

Hodge. Sell not thy wife, *Rafe*, make her not a whore.

Ham. Say, wilt thou freely cease thy claime in her,
And let her be my wife ?

All. No do not *Raph.*

Raph. Sirra *Hammon Hammon*, dost thou thinke a shooe-maker is so bafe, to be a bawd to his own wife for comodity? take thy gold, choake with it: were I not lame, I would make thee eate thy words.

Firke. A shoemaker sell his flesh and blood, oh indignitie!

Hodg. Sirra, take vp your pelfe, and be packing.

Ham. I will not touch one pennie, but in lieu,
Of that great wrong I offered thy *Fane*,
To *Fane* and thee I giue that twentie pound,
Since I haue faild of her, during my life,
I vow no woman else shall be my wife:
Farewell good fellowes of the Gentle trade,
Your morning mirth my mourning day hath made.

Exit.

Firke. Touch the gold creature if you dare, y'are best be trudging: here *Fane* take thou it, now lets home my hearts.

Hodge. Stay, who comes here? *Fane*, on againe with thy maske.

Enter Lincolne, L. Maior, and seruants.

Lin. Yonders the lying varlet mockt vs so.

L. Ma. Come hither sirra.

Firke. I fir, I am sirra, you meane me, do you not?

Lin. Where is my Nephew married?

Firke. Is he married? God giue him ioy, I am glad of it: they haue a faire day, and the signe is in a good Planet, *Mars* in *Venus*.

L. Ma. Villaine, thou toldst me that my daughter *Rose*,

This morning should be married at Saint *Faiths*,
Wee haue watcht there these three houres at the least,
Yet see we no such thing.

Firke. Truly I am sorry fort, a Bride's a prettie thing.

Hodge. Come to the purpose, yonder's the Bride

and Bridegroom you looke for I hope : though you be Lords, you are not to barre, by your authoritie, men from women, are you ?

L. Ma. See fee my daughter's maskt.

Lin. True, and my nephew,
To hide his guilt, counterfeits him lame.

Firke. Yea truly, God helpe the poore couple,
they are lame and blind.

L. Ma. Ile ease her blindnesse.

Lin. Ile his lamenesse cure.

Firke. Lye downe firs, and laugh, my fellow *Raph* is taken for *Rowland Lacy*, and *Fane* for mistris damaske Rose, this is all my knauerie.

L. Ma. What haue I found you minion ?

Lin. O base wretch,
Nay hide thy face, the horror of thy guilt
Can hardly be washt off : where are thy powers ?
What battells haue you made ? O yes I see,
Thou foughtst with shame, and shame hath conquer'd
thee ;

This lamenesse with not ferue.

L. Ma. Unmaske your selfe.

Lin. Lead home your daughter.

L. Ma. Take your nephew hence.

Raph. Hence, swounds, what meane you ? are you mad ? I hope you cannot enforce my wife from me, wher's *Hammon* ?

L. Ma. Your wife ?

Lin. What *Hammon* ?

Raph. Yea my wife, and therefore the proudest of you that laies hands on her first, Ile lay my Crutch crosse his pate.

Firke. To him lame *Raph*, here's braue sport.

Raph. *Rose* call you her ? why her name is *Fane*, looke here selfe, do you know her now ?

Lin. Is this your daughter ?

L. Ma. No nor this your nephew :
My Lord of Lincolne, we are both abus'd,
By this base craftie varlet.

Firke. Yea forsooth no varlet, forsooth no base, forsooth I am but meane, not craftie neither, but of the Gentle Craft.

L. Ma. Where is my daughter *Rose*? where is my child?

Linc. Where is my Nephew *Lacy* married?

Firke. Why here is good lac'd mutton as I promise you.

Linc. Villaine Ile haue thee punished for this wrong.

Firke. Punish the Iourneyman villaine, but not the Iourneyman Shoomaker.

Enter Dodger.

Dodg. My Lord, I come to bring vnwelcome newes,

Your Nephew *Lacy* and your daughter *Rose*,

Earely this morning wedded at the Sauoy,

None being present but the Lady Mayresse:

Besides I learnt among the Officers,

The Lord Maior vowes to stand in their defence,

Gainst any that shall seeke to crosse the match.

Lin. Dares *Eyre* the Shoomaker vphold the deed?

Firke. Yes sir, Shoomakers dare stand in a womans quarrel

I warrant you, as deepe as another, and deeper too.

Dod. Besides his Grace to day dines with the Mayor,

Who on his knees humbly intends to fall,

And beg a pardon for your Nephews fault.

Lin. But Ile preuent him, come Sir *Rager Oslay*,

The King will do vs iustice in this cause,

How ere their hands haue made them man and wife,

I will disioyne the match, or lose my life. *Exeunt.*

Firke. Aduie Monsieur *Dodger*, farewell fooles, ha, ha.

Oh if they had staid I would haue so lamb'd them with flouts, O heart, my Codpeece-point is ready to flye in peeces euery time I thinke vpon mistris *Rose*, but let that passe, as my Ladie Mayresse saies.

Hodge. This matter is answered : come *Raph*, home with thy wife, come my fine Shoemakers, lets to our masters the new Lord Mayor, and there swagger this Shrove Tuesday, Ile promise you wine enough, for *Madge* keeps the Seller.

All. Oh rare ! *Madge* is a good wench.

Firke. And Ile promise you meat enough for snipping *Susan* keeps the Larder, Ile lead you to victuals my brave souldiers, follow your Captaine, O bratte, harke, harke.

Bell rings.

All. The Pancake bell rings, the Pancake bell, tri-lill my hearts.

Firke. O brave, oh sweet bell, O delicate Pancakes, open the doores my hearts, and shut vp the windowes, keeps in the house, let out the Pancakes, oh rare my hearts, let's march together for the honour of *S. Hugh*, to the great new hall in Gracious streete corner, which our master the new Lord Maior hath built.

Rafe. O the crew of good fellows that will dine at my Lord Maiors cost to day !

Hodge. By the lord, my Lord Maior is a most brave man, how shall Prentises be bound to pray for him and the honor of the Gentlemen Shoemakers ! lets feed and bee fat with my Lordes bountie.

Firke. O muscull Bell still ; O *Hodge*, O my brethren ; there's cheere for the heauens, venison pasties walke vp and downe piping hot like Sericants : Beefe and brewes comes marching in drifattes, fritters and pancakes come trowing in in wheele-barrowes, hens and oranges hopping in Porters baskets, collops and egges in scuttles, and tarts and custards comes quanering in in malt shouels.

Enter more Prentises.

All. Whoop, looke here, looke here.

Hodge. How now mad lads whither away so fast ?

1 *Prent.* Whither ? why to the great new Hall, know

you not why? the Lord Maior hath bidden all the prentises in London to breakfast this morning.

All. Oh braue Shoomaker, oh braue Lord of incomprehensible good fellowship, whoo, hearke you, the Pancake-Bell rings. *Cast up Caps.*

Firk. Nay more my hearts, euerie Shroue-tuesday is our yeare of Jubile : and when the Pancake-Bell rings, we are as as free as my Lord Maior, wee may shut up our shoppes and make holiday : I'll haue it cal'd Saint *Hughs* Holiday.

All. Agreed, agreed, Saint *Hughs* Holiday.

Hodge. And this shall continue for euer.

All. Oh braue ; come come my hearts, away, away.

Firke. O eternall credit to vs of the Gentle Craft, march faire my hearts, O rare. *Exeunt.*

Enter the King and his traine ouer the stage.

King. Is our Lord Maior of London such a gallant?

Nobleman. One of the merriest madcaps in your Land,

Your Grace will thinke when you behold the man,
Hees rather a wild Ruffian than a Maior :
Yet thus much Ile ensure your Majestie,
In all his actions that concerne his state,
He is as serious, prouident, and wise,
As full of grauitie amongst the graue,
As any Maior hath been these many yeares.

King. I am with child till I behold this huffcap,
But all my doubt is when we come in prefence,
His madnesse will be dasht cleane out of countenance.

Noblem. It may be so, my Liege.

King. Which to preuent,
Let some one giue him notice 'tis our pleasure,
That he put on his wonted merriment :
Set forward. *All.* On afore. *Exeunt.*

Enter Eyre, Hodge, Firke, Raph, and other Shoemakers, all with napkins on their shoulders.

Eyre. Come my fine *Hodge*, my iolly Gentlemen Shoemakers, soft, where be these Caniballes, these varlets my officers, let them all walke and wait vpon my brethren, for my meaning is, that none but Shoemakers, none but the liuerie of my Companie shall in their fattin hoods wait vpon the trencher of my Soueraigne.

Firke. O my Lord, it will be rare.

Eyre. No more *Firke*, come liuely, let your fellow prentifes want no cheere, let wine be plentiful as beere, and beere as water, hang these penny pinching fathers, that cram wealth in innocent Lambes skinner, up knaues, auant, looke to my guests.

Hodge. My Lord, we are at our wits end for roome, those hundred Tables will not feast the fourth part of them.

Eyre. Then couer me those hundred Tables againe and againe, till all my iolly prentifes be feasted : auoyd *Hodge*, runne *Raph*, friske about my nimble *Firke*, carowse mee fadome healths to the honour of the shoemakers, doe they drinke liuely *Hodge*? do they tickle it *Firke*?

Firke. Tickle it? some of them haue taken their liquor standing so long, that they can stand no longer : but for meat they would eat it and they had it.

Eyre. Want they meat? where's this swag-belly, this greasie kitchinstuffe cooke, call the varlet to me : want meat? *Firke*, *Hodge*, lame *Rafe*, runne my tall men, beleaguer the Shambles, begger all East-cheape, ferue me whole Oxen in Chargers, and let Sheepe whine vpon the tables like Pigs, for want of good fellowes to eat them. Want meat? vanish *Firke*, auant *Hodge*.

Hodge. Your Lordship mistakes my man *Firke*, he meanes their bellies want meat, not the boords, for they haue drunke so much they can eat nothing.

*Enter Hans, Rose, and Wife.**Wife.* Where is my Lord ?*Eyre.* How now Lady *Maggy* ?*Wife.* The Kings most excellent Maieftie is new come, he fends me for thy honor, one of his most worshipfull Peeres bad me tell thou must be merrie, and so forth : but let that passe.*Eyre.* Is my Soueraigne come ? vanish my tall Shoomakers, my nimble brethren, looke to my guests the prentizes : yet stay a little, how now *Hans*, how lookes my little *Rose* ?*Hans.* Let me request you to remember me, I know your honour easily may obtaine, Free pardon of the King for me and *Rose*, And reconcile me to my Uncles grace.*Eyre.* Haue done my good *Hans*, my honest Journeyman, looke cheerily, I'll fall vpon both my knees until they be as hard as horne, but I'll get thy pardon.*Wife.* Good my Lord haue a care what you speake to his Grace.*Eyre.* Away you Iflington whitepot, hence you hopper-arse, you Barly pudding full of maggots, you broild Carbonado, auant, auant, auoyd *Mephistophiles* : shall *Sim Eyre* learne to speake of you Lady *Maggy* ? vanish mother *Minéuer-Cap*, vanish, goe, trip and goe, meddle with your platters and your pisserie pasherie, your flewes and your whirligigs, goe, rub out mine ally : *Sim Eyre* knowes how to speake to a Pope, to *Sultan Solymán*, to *Tamberlaine* and he were here : and I shall melt, shall I droope before my Soueraigne ? no, come my Lady *Maggy*, follow me *Hans*, about your businesse my frolike freebooters : *Firke*, friske about, and about, and about, for the honour of mad *Simon Eyre*, Lord Mayor of *London*.*Firke.* Hey for the honour of the Shoomakers.*Exeunt.*

A long flourish or two, enter the King, Nobles, Eyre, his Wife, Lacy, Rose; Lacy and Rose kneele.

King. Well *Lacy*, though the fact was very foule,
Of your reuolting from our Kingly loue,
And your owne dutie, yet we pardon you,
Rise both, and Mistris *Lacy*, thanke my Lord Mayor
For your young bridegroom here.

Eyre. So my deare Liege, *Sim Eyre* and my brethren the Gentlemen Shoemakers shall set your sweet Maiesties image cheeke by iole by Saint *Hugh*, for this honour you haue done poore *Simon Eyre*, I beseech your Grace pardon my rude behauiour, I am a handicrafts man, yet my heart is without craft, I would be sorrie at my foule that my boldnesse should offend my King.

King. Nay, I pray thee good Lord Mayor, be euen as merry
As if thou wert among thy Shoemakers,
It does me good to see thee in this humour.

Eyre. Saist thou me so my sweet *Dioclesian*? then humpe, Prince am I none, yet am I Princely borne, by the Lord of Ludgate my Liege, I'll be as merrie as a Pie.

King. Tell me in faith mad *Eyre*, how old thou art?

Eyre. My Liege, a very boy, a stripling, a yonker, you see not a white haire on my head, nor a gray in this beard, euery haire I assure thy Maiesty that stickes in this beard, *Sim Eyre* valews at the King of *Babilons* ransome, *Tamar Chams* beard was a rubbing brush too't, yet I'll shave it off, and stuffe tennis balls with it to please my bully King.

King. But all this while I do not know your age.

Eyre. My Liege, I am six and fifty yeare old, yet I can cry humpe, with a sound heart, for the honour of Saint *Hugh*: marke this old wench my King, I danc't the shaking of the sheets with her six and thirtie yeares agoe, and yet I hope to get two or three yong

Lord Mayors ere I die : I am lusty still, *Sim Eyre* still : care and cold lodging brings white haire. My sweet Maiesty, let care vanish, cast it vpon thy Nobles, it will make thee looke always young like *Apollo*, and cry humpe : Prince am I none, yet am I Princely borne.

King. Ha, ha, say *Cornewall*, didst thou euer see his like ?

Noblem. Not I my Lord.

Enter Lincolne and Lord Mayor.

King. *Lincolne* what newes with you ?

Lin. My gracious Lord haue care vnto your selfe, For there are Traitors here.

All. Traitors, where ? who ?

Eyre. Traitors in my house ! God forbid, where be my Officers ! Ile spend my soule ere my King feele harme.

King. Where is the Traitor, *Lincolne* ?

Lin. Here he stands.

King. *Cornewall*, lay hold on *Lacy* : *Lincolne* speake,

What canst thou lay vnto thy Nephewes charge ?

Lin. This my deare Liege, your Grace to do me honour,

Heapt on the head of this degenerous boy,
Desertlesse fauours, you made choyce of him,
To be Commander ouer powers in *France*,
But he :

King. Good *Lincolne*, prethee pause a while,
Euen in thine eyes I read what thou wouldst speake,
I know how *Lacy* did neglect our loue,
Ran himselfe deeply (in the highest degree)
Into vile treason.

Lin. Is he not a Traitor ?

King. *Lincolne*, he was, now haue we pardoned him,

'Twas not a base want of true valours fire
That held him out of *France*, but loues desire.

Lin. I will not beare his shame vpon my backe.

King. Nor shalt thou *Lincolne*, I forgiue you both.

Lin. Then good my Liege forbid the boy to wed
One whose meane birth will much disgrace his bed.

King. Are they not married ?

Lin. No my Liege.

Both. We are.

King. Shall I diuorce them then ? O be it farre,
That any hand on earth should dare vntie
The sacred knot knit by Gods Maiestie ;
I would not for my Crowne disioyne their hands,
That are conioyn'd in holy nuptiall bands :

How saist thou *Lacy*, woulst thou loose thy *Rose* ?

Hans. Not for all Indians wealth, my Soueraigne.

King. But *Rose* I am fure her *Lacy* would forgoe.

Rose. If *Rose* were askt that question, shee'd say no.

King. You heare them *Lincolne*.

Lin. Yea my Liege I do.

King. And canst thou finde ith heart to part these
two ?

Who seekes besides you to diuorce these louers ?

L. Ma. I do (my gracious Lord) I am her father.

King. Sir *Roger Oteley*, our last Mayor I thinke.

Nob. The same my Liege.

King. Would you offend Loues lawes ?

Well you shall haue your wills : you sued to me
To prohibit the match : Soft, let me see,
You both are married, *Lacy* art thou not ?

Hans. I am dread Soueraigne.

King. Then vpon thy life,
I charge thee not to call this woman wife.

L. Ma. I thanke your Grace.

Rose. O my most gracious Lord. *kneels.*

King. Nay *Rose* neuer wooe me, I tell you true,
Although as yet I am a Batchelor,
Yet I beleeeue I shall not marrie you.

Rose. Can you diuide the body from the soule,
Yet make the body liue ?

King. Yea, so profound ?

I cannot *Rose*, but you I must diuide,
 Faire maid this Bridegroome cannot be your Bride,
 Are you pleas'd *Lincolne*? *Otley*, are you pleas'd?

Both. Yes my Lord. •

King. Then must my heart be eas'd,
 For credit me, my conscience liues in paine,
 Till these whom I diuorc'd be ioyned againe :
Lacy giue me thy hand, *Rose* lend me thine,
 Be what you would be : kisse now : so, that's fine,
 At night (*Louers*) to bed : now let me see,
 Which of you all mislikes this harmony?

L. Ma. Will you then take from me my childe
 perforce?

King. Why tell me *Otley* shines not *Lacys* name,
 As bright in the worlds eye, as the gay beames
 Of any Citizen?

Lin. Yea but my gracious Lord,
 I doe mislike the match farre more than he,
 Her blood is too too base.

King. *Lincolne* no more,
 (Dost thou not know, that loue respects no blood ?
 Cares not for difference of birth or state,
 The maid is young, well borne, faire, vertuous,
 A worthy Bride for any Gentleman :
 Besides your Nephew for her sake did stoope
 To bare necessitie ; and as I heare,
 Forgetting honours and all Courtly pleasures,
 To gaine her loue became a shoemaker :
 As for the honour which he lost in *France*,
 Thus I redeeme it : *Lacy* kneele thee downe,
 Arise Sir *Rowland Lacy* : tell me now,
 Tell me in earnest *Otley*, canst thou chide ?
 Seeing thy *Rose* a Lady and a Bride.

L. Ma. I am content with what your Grace hath
 done.

Lin. And I my Liege since there's no remedy.

King. Come on then, all shake hands, I'll haue
 you friends
 (Where there is much loue all discord ends :

What saies my mad Lord Mayor to all this loue ?

Eyre. O my Liege, the honour you haue done to my fine Journeyman here, *Rowland Lacy*, and all these fauours which you haue showne to me this day in my poore house, will make *Simon Eyre* liue longer by one dozen of warme Summers more than he should.

King. Nay my mad Lord Mayor, (that shall be thy name)

If any grace of mine can length thy life,
One honour more I'll doe thee, that new building,
Which at thy cost in Cornehill is erected,
Shall take a name from vs, wee'll haue it call'd,
The Leaden Hall, because in digging it,
You found the lead that couereth the fame.

Eyre. I thanke your Maiesty.

Wife. God blesse your grace.

King. *Lincolne*, a word with you.

Enter Hodge, Firke, Rafe, and more Shoormakers.

Eyre. How now my mad knaues ! Peace, speake softly, yonder is the King.

King. With the old troope which there we keepe in pay,

We will incorporate a new supply :
Before one Summer more passe ore my head,
France shall repent *England* was iniured,
What are all those ?

Hans. All Shoormakers my Liege,
Sometimes my fellowes, in their companies
I liu'd as merry as an Emperour.

King. My mad Lord Mayor, are all these Shoormakers ?

Eyre. All Shoormakers my Liege, all Gentlemen of the Gentle Craft, true Troyans, courageous Cordwainers, they all kneele to the Shrine of holy Saint *Hugh*.

All. God saue your Maiesty all shoormakers.

King. Mad *Simon*, would they any thing with vs ?

Eyre. Mum, mad knaues not a word, I'll doo't I

warrant you. They are all Beggers my Liege, all for themselves and I for them all, on both my knees doe intreat, that for the honour of poore *Simon Eyre*, and the good of his Brethren these mad knaues your Grace would vouchsafe some priuilege to my new Leaden hall, that it may be lawfull for vs to buy and sell Leather there two dayes in a weeke.

King. Mad *Sim*, I grant your sute, you shall haue Patent

To hold two market dayes in Leaden-Hall,
Mondayes and Fridayes, those shall be the times :
Will this content you ?

All. Iesus bleſſe your Grace.

Eyre. In the name of these my poore brethren Shoemakers, I most humblye thanke your Grace. But before I rise, seeing you are in the giuing veine, and we in the begging, grant *Sim Eyre* one boone more.

King. What is it my Lord Mayor ?

Eyre. Vouchsafe to tast of a poore Banquet, that's sweetly waiting for your sweet presence.

King. I shall vndoe thee *Eyre* only with this, (5)
Alreadie haue I beene too troublesome,
Say, haue I not ?

Eyre. O my deare King, *Sim Eyre* cannot say so ;
vpon a day of shrouing which I promist to all the merrie Prentises of *London* : for an't please you when I was prentise (6)

I bare the water-tankard, and my coat
Sits not a whit the worſe vpon my backe :
And then vpon a morning, some mad boyes
(It was Shroue-tuesday, euen as 'tis now)
Gaued me my breakfast, and I swore then by the

(5) only with feasts. 1600.

(6) O my deere King *Sim Eyre* was taken vnawares vpon a day of shrouing which I promist long ago to the prentises of *London* : for andt please your Highnes, in time past, &c. 1600.

stopple of my Tankard, if euer I came to be Lord
Mayor of *London*, I would feast al the Prentises. This
● by my Liege I did it, and the slaues had an hundred
Tables fve times couered, they are gone home and
vanisht.

Yet adde more glorie to the Gentle Trade,
Taste of *Eyres* Banquet, *Simon's* happie made.

King. I will taste of thy Banquet, and will say,
I haue not met more pleasure on a day ;
(Friends of the Gentle Craft, thanks to you all,
Thanks my kinde Lady Mayresse for our cheere :
Come Lords a while let's reuell it at home,
When all our sports, and banquetings are done
Warres must right wrongs which Frenchmen haue
begun. (7) *Exeunt.*

(7) The later Editions read :
When all our words and banquetings are done,
We must right wrongs which Frenchmen haue begun.

FINIS.





THE
Pleasant Comedie of
Old Fortunatus.

As it was plaied before the Queenes
Maiestie this Christmas, by the Right
Honourable the Earle of Nottingham,
Lord high Admirall of England his Seruants,



Aut Nunc Aut Nunquam.

LONDON

Printed by S. S. for William Aspley, dwelling in
Paules Church-yard at the signe of the
Tygers head. 1600.

*The Prologue at Court: Enter two
old men.*

1. **A** Re you then traueiling to the temple of Eliza ?
2. Euen to her temple are my feeble limmes
traueiling. Some cal her Pandora : some Gloriana,
some Cynthia : some Delphoebe, some Astraea : all by
seuerall names to expresse seuerall loues : Yet all
those names make but one celestiall body, as all those
loues meete to create but one soule.

1. I am one of her owne countrie, and we adore
her by the name of Eliza.

2. Blessed name, happie countrie : Your Eliza
makes your land Elizium : but what doe you offer ?

1. That which all true Subiects should : when I was
young, an Armed hand ; now I am crooked, an vp-
right heart : But what offer you ?

2. That which all straungers doe : two eyes stricke
blinde with admiration : Two lips (proud to sound her
glorie :) Two hands held vp full of prayers and
praifes : What not, that may expresse loue ? what not,
that may make her beloued ?

1. How long ist since you last beheld her ?

2. A iust yeere : yet that yeere hath seemd to me
but one day, because her glorie hath beene my
howrely contemplation, and yet that yeere hath seemd
to me more then twice seuen yeres, because so long I
haue beene absent from her. Come therefore, good
father, lets goe faster, leaft we come too late : for see,
the Tapers of the night are already lighted, and stand
brightly burning in their starrie Candlestickes : See howe
gloriously the Moone shines vpon vs. *Both kneele.*

1. Peace foole : tremble, and kneele : The Moone
saist thou ?

Our eyes are dazled by Elizaes beames,

See (if at least thou dare see) where shee sits :
 This is the great Panthæon of our Goddesse,
 And all those faces which thine eyes thought starres,
 Are Nymphes attending on her deitie.
 Prithce begin, for I want power to speake.

2. No, no, speake thou, I want words to begin.

Weepes.

1. Alacke what shall I doe ? com'ft thou with me,
 And weepst now thou beholdst this Maiestie ?

2. Great land-lady of hearts, pardon me.

1. Blame not mine eyes, good father, in these
 teares.

2. My pure loue shines, as thine doth in thy feares :
 I weepe for ioy to see so many heads
 Of prudent Ladies, clothed in the luerie
 Of siluer-handed age, for seruing you,
 Whilst in your eyes youthes glory doth renue :
 I weepe for ioy to see the Sunne looke old,
 To see the Moone mad at her often change,
 To see the Starres onely by night to shine,
 Whilst you are still bright, still one, still diuine :
 I weepe for ioy to see the world decay,
 Yet see Eliza flourishing like May :
 O pardon me your Pilgrim, I haue measurd
 Many a mile to find you : and haue brought,
 Old Fortunatus and his family,
 With other Cipnots (my poore countrie men)
 To pay a whole yeeres tribute : O vouchsafe,
 Dread Queene of Fayries, with your gracious eyes,
 T'accept theirs and our humble sacrifice.

1. Now ile beg for thee too : and yet I need not :
 Her sacred hand hath euermore beene knowne,
 As soone held out to straungers as her owne.

2. Thou doest encourage me : Ile fetch them in,
 They haue no princely gifts, we are all poore,
 Our offerings are true hearts, who can wish more ?

Exeunt.

THE PROLOGUE.

OF *Loues* sweete war, our timerous Muse doth sing,
And to the bosome of each gentle deare,
Offence her Artles tunes, borne on the wing
Of sacred Poesy. A benumbing feare,
(That your nice soules, cloyd with dilicious sounds,
Will loath her lowly notes) makes her pull in
Her fainting pineons, and her spirit confounds
Before the weake voice of her song begin.
Yet since within the circle of each eye,
(Being like so many Suns in his round Sphere)
No wrinckle yet is seene, sheele dare to flie,
Borne vp with hopes, that as you oft do reare
With your faire hands, those who would els sinke
down,
So some will deigne to smile, where all might frown :
And for this smal Circumference must stand,
For the imagin'd Sur-face of much land,
Of many kingdomes, and since many a mile,
Should here be measurd out : our muse intreats,
Your thoughts to helpe poore Art, and to allow,
That I may serue as Chorus to her scences,
She begs your pardon, for sheele fend one forth,
Not when the lawes of Poesy doe call,
But as the storie needes, your gracious eye
Giues life to Fortunatus historie.

Exit.



THE COMEDIE OF

Olde Fortunatus.

*Enter Fortunatus meanelly attired, hee walkes
ere he speake once or twice about
cracking Nuts.*



Fortunatus.

O, ho, ho, ho, ho.

Eccho within. Ho, ho, ho, ho.

Fortun. There boy.

Eccho. There boy.

Fort. And thou bee'st a goodfellow, tel me how
cal'st this wood.

Eccho. This wood.

Fort. I this wood, & which is my best way out.

Eccho. Best way out.

Fort. Ha, ha, ha, thats true, my best way out, is
my best way out, but how that out will come in, by this
Maggot I know not, I see by this we are all wormes
meate : well, I am very poore and verie patient, Pa-
tience is a vertue : would I were not vertuous, thats to
say, not poore, but full of vice, (thats to say, ful of
chinckes) Ha, ha, so I am, for I am so full of chinckes,
that a Horfe with one eye may looke through and
through me, I haue fighed long, and that makes me
windie : I haue fasted long, and that makes me chafte,
marie I haue praied little, and that makes mee I still
daunce in this coniuring circle : I haue wandred long,

and that makes me wearie ; but for my wearinesse, anon Ile lie down, in steade of fasting ile feede vpon Nuts, and in stead of fighing will laugh and bee leane, Sirra, *Eccho*.

Eccho. Sirra *Eccho*.

Fort. Heres a Nut.

Eccho. Heres a Nut.

Fort. Cracke it

Eccho. Cracke it.

Fort. Hang thy selfe.

Eccho. Hang thy selfe.

Fort. Th'art a knaue, a knaue.

Eccho. A knaue, a knaue.

Fort. Ha, ha, ha, ha.

Eccho. Ha, ha, ha, ha.

Fortunat. Why so, two fooles laugh at one another, I at my tittle tattle gammer eccho, and shee at me. Shortly there will creepe out in print some filthie booke of the old hoarie wandring Knight, meaning me : would I were that booke, for then I should be sure to creepe out from hence : I should bee a good fouldiour, for I trauerse my ground rarely, marrie I see neither enemie nor friends, but Popiniayes, and Squirrels, and Apes, and Owles, and Dawes, and Wagtailes, and the spite is that none of these grasse-eaters can speake my language, but this foole that mockes me, and sweares to haue the last word (in spite of my teeth) I, and shee shall haue it because shee is a woman, which kind of cattell are indeede all *Eccho*, nothing but tongue, and are like the great bell of S. Michaels in Cyprus, that keepe most rumbling when men would most sleepe. *Eccho*, a poxe on thee for mocking me.

Eccho. A poxe on thee for mocking me.

Fortunat. Why so, Snip snap, this warre is at an end, but this wildernesse is world without end, to see how trauell can transforme : my teeth are turn'd into Nutcrackers, a thoufand to one I breake out shortly, for I am full of nothing, but waxing kernels, my tongue

speakes no language but an Almond for Parrat, and cracke me this Nut : If I hop three daies more vp and downe this cage of Coockooes nests, I shall turne wilde man fure, and be hyred to throw Squibs among the Cōminaltie vpon some terrible day. In the meane time to tell truth here will I lie. Farwell foole.

Eccho. Farwell foole.

Fort. Are not these comfortable words to a wise man? All haile Signior tree, by your leaue ile sleepe vnder your leaues, I pray bow to me, and ile bend to you, for your backe and my browes must, I doubt, haue a game or two at Noddie erre I wake againe : downe great heart, downe. Hey, ho, well, well.

He lyes downe and sleepest: Enter a Gardiner, a Smith, a Monke, a Shepheard all crown'd, a Nymph with a Globe, another with Fortunes wheele, then Fortune: After her foure Kings with broken Crownes and Scepters, chained in siluer Gaires and led by her. The foremost come out singing. Fortune takes her Chaire, the Kings lying at her fecte, shee treading on them as shee goes vp.

The Song.

Fortune smiles, cry holyday,
Dimples on her cheekes doe dwell,
Fortune frownes, cry wellada,
Her loue is heauen, her hate is hell :
Since heauen and hell obey her power,
Tremble when her eyes doe lowre,
Since heauen and hell her power obey,
When shee smiles, crie holy day.

Holy-day with ioy we cry
And bend, and bend and merily,
Sing Hymnes to Fortunes deitie,
Sing Hymnes to Fortunes deitie.

All. { Let vs sing, merrily, merrily, merrily,
 With our song let heauen resound,
 Fortunes hands our heads haue crown'd,
 Let vs sing merrily, merrily, merrily.

1. *King.* Accurfd Queene of chaunce, what had
 we done,
 Who hauing sometimes like young *Phadons*,
 Ryd in the burnisht Charriot of the Sun,
 And sometimes beene thy minions, when thy fingers
 Weau'd wanton love-nets in our curled hayre,
 And with sweete iugling kisses warm'd our cheekes :
 Oh how haue we offended thy proud eyes,
 That thus we should be spurnd and trod vpon,
 Whilst those infected limmes of the sicke world,
 Are fixt by thee for starres in that bright Sphere,
 Wherein our Sunne like *Radiance* did appeare.

All the Kings.

Accurfd Queene of chaunce, damn'd forcereffe.

The rest.

Most pow'rfull Queene of chaunce dread foueraign-
 nesse.

Fort. No more : curse on : your cries to me are
 Musicke,
 And fill the sacred roundure of mine eares,
 With tunes more sweete then mouing of the Spheres :
 Curse on : on our celestially browes doe sit
 Un-nubred smiles, which then leaps from their
 throne,
 When they see Peasants daunce and Monarches
 groane.
 Behold you not this Globe, this golden bowle,
 This toy cal'd worlde at our Imperiall feete ?
 This world is Fortunes ball wherewith she fports.
 Sometimes I strike it vp into the ayre,
 And then create I Emperours and kings

Sometimes I spurne it : at which spurne crawles out
That wild beaſt multitude : curſe on you fooles,
Tis I that tumble Princes from their thrones,
And gild falſe browes with glittering diadems,
Tis I that tread on neckes of Conquerours,
And when like Semi-gods they haue beene drawne,
In Iuorie Charriots to the capitoll,
Circled about with wonder of all eyes,
The ſhouts of euery tongue, loue of all hearts,
Being ſwolne with their owne greatneſſe, I haue prickt
The bladder of their pride, and made them die,
As water bubbles (without memorie)
I thruſt baſe cowards into Honours chaire,
Whilſt the true ſpirited Souldiour ſtands by
Bare headed, and all bare, whilſt at his ſkarres
They ſkoſſe, that nere durſt view the face of warres.
I ſet an Ideots cap on vertues head,
Turne learning out of doores, clothe wit in ragges,
And paint ten thouſand Images of Loame,
In gawdie filken colours : on the backes
Of Mules and Aſſes I make aſſes ride,
Onely for ſport, to ſee the Apish world
Worſhip ſuch beaſts with ſound idolatrie.
This Fortune does, and when this is done,
She ſits and ſmiles to heare ſome curſe her name,
And ſome with adoration crowne her fame.
Monck. True center of this wide circumference,
Sacred commaundreſſe of the deſtinies,
Our tongues ſhall onely ſownd thy excellence.
The reſt. Thy excellence our tongues ſhall onely
found.

The ſecond King.

Thou painted ſtrumpet, that with honied ſmiles,
Openeſt the gates of heauen and crieth, Come in,
Whoſe glories being ſeene, thou with one frowne,
(In pride) lower then hell tumbleſt vs downe.
All Kings. Euer for euer wil we banne thy name.

Fort. How sweete your howlings relish in mine
cares? *She comes downe.*

Stand by ; now rise, behold, here lies a wretch,
To vex your foules, this begger ile aduaunce
Beyond the sway of thought, take instruments,
And let the raptures of choice Harmonie,
Through the hollow windings of his care,

Musicke a while, and he waketh.

Carrie their sacred sounds, & wake each sence,
To stand amaz'd at our bright Eminence.

Fortunat. Oh, how am I transported ? Is this
earth ?

Or blest Elizium ?

Fortune. *Fortunatus*, rise.

Fort. Dread Goddesse, how should such a wretch
as I

Be knowne to such a glorious deitie ?

Oh pardon me : for to this place I come,

Lead by my fate, not folly ; in this wood

With wearie sorrow haue I wandered,

And three times seene the sweating Sun take rest,

And three times franticke Cynthia naked ride,

About the rustie high-waies of the skies

Stucke full of burning Starres, which lent her light

To court her Negro paramour grim night.

Fortune. This trauell now expires : yet from this
circle,

Where I and these with fairie troopes abide,

Thou canst not stir, unlesse I be thy guide.

I the worlds Empresse am Fortune my name,

This hand hath written in thicke leaues of steele

An euerlasting booke of changelesse Fate,

Shewing whoe's happie, who vnfortunate.

Fort. If euerie name (dread Queene) be there
writ down,

I am sure mine stands in Characters of blacke,

Though happines her selfe lie in my name,

I am forrowes heire, and eldest sonne to shame.

The Kings. No, we are sons to shame, and for-
rowes heires.

Fortune. Thou shalt be one of Fortunes minions :
Behold these foure chain'd like Tartarian slaues,
These I created Emperours and Kings,
And these are now my basest vnderlings :
This sometimes was a Germane Emperour,
Henry the fift, who being first depos'd,
Was after thrust into a dungeon,
And thus in siluer chaines shall rot to death.
This Frederick Barbarossa Emperour
Of Almaine once : but by Pope Alexander
Now spurn'd and trod on when he takes his horse,
And in these fetters shall he die his slaue.
This wretch once wore the diademe of Fraunce,
(Lewes the meeke,) but through his childrens pride,
Thus haue I caused him to be famished.
Here stands the verie soule of miserie
Poore Baiazet old Turkish Emperour,
And once the greatest Monarch in the East ;
Fortune her selfe is said to view thy fall,
And grieues to see thee glad to licke vp crommes
At the proud feete of that great Scithian fwaine,
Fortunes best minion, warlike Tamberlaine :
Yet must thou in a cage of Iron be drawne
In triumph at his heeles, and there in grieve
Dash out thy braines.

The third King. Oh miserable me.

Fortune. No teares can melt the heart of destinie :
These haue I ruin'd and exalted those :
These hands haue conquerd Spaine, these browes
fill vp
The golden circle of rich Portugall.
Viriat a Monarch now, but borne a shepherd.
This Primislaus (a Bohemian king)
Last day a Carter : this Monke Gregorie
Now lifted to the Papall dignitie,
Wretches, why gnaw you not your fingers off,
And teare your tongues out, seeing your selues trod
downe,

And this Duch Botcher wearing Munsters crowne ?
 John Leyden borne in Holland poore and bafe,
 Now rich in Emperie and Fortunes grace.
 As theſe I haue aduanc'd, ſo will I thee.
 Six gifts I ſpend vpon mortalitie,
 Wiſedome, ſtrength, health, beautie, long life, and
 riches,
 Out of my bountie : one of theſe is thine,
 Choofe then which likes thee beſt.

Fortunat. Oh moſt diuine :
 Giue me but leaue to borrow wonders eye,
 To looke (amaz'd) at thy bright maiestie,
 Wiſedome, ſtrength, health, beautie, long life and
 riches.

Fortune. Before thy ſoule (at this deepe Lotterie)
 Draw forth her prize, ordain'd by deſtinie,
 Know that heres no recanting a firſt choice.
 Choofe then diſcreetly (for the lawes of Fate,
 Being grauen in ſteele, muſt ſtand inuiolate.)

Fortunat. Daughters of Ioue and the vnblemiſht
 night,
 Moſt righteous Parce, guide my Genius right,
 Wiſedome, ſtrength, health, beautie, long life, and
 riches.

Fortune. Staie, Fortunatus, once more heare me
 ſpeake,
 If thou kiſſe wiſedomes cheeke and make her thine,
 Sheele breath into thy lips diuinitie,
 And thou (like Phebus) ſhalt ſpeake Oracle,
 Thy heauen-inſpired ſoule, on wiſedomes wings,
 Shall flie vp to the Parliament of Ioue,
 And read the Statutes of eternitie,
 And ſee whats paſt, and learne what is to come.
 If thou lay claime to ſtrength, Armies ſhall quake,
 To ſee thee frowne : as Kings at mine doe lie,
 So ſhall thy feete trample on Emperie ;
 Make Health thine obieſt, thou ſhall be ſtrong prooffe,
 Gainſt the deepe ſearching darts of ſurfetting,
 Be euer merrie, euer reuelling.

Wish but for beautie, and within thine eyes,
Two naked Cupids amorously shall swim,
And on thy cheekes ile mixe such white and red,
That Joue shall turne away young Ganimede,
And with immortall armes shall circle thee.
Are thy desires long life? thy vitall thread
Shal be stretcht out, thou shalt behold the chaunge
Of Monarchies, and see those children die,
Whose great great Graundfires now in cradles lie.
If through Golds sacred hunger thou dost pine,
Those gilded wantons which in swarmes doe runne,
To warme their slender bodies in the funne,
Shall stand for number of those golden piles,
Which in rich pride shall swell before thy feete,
As those are; so shall these be infinite.
Awaken then thy soules best faculties,
And gladly kisse this bounteous hand of Fate,
Which striues to blesse thy name of Fortunate.

The Kings. Old man, take heede, her smiles wil
murder thee.

The other. Old man, sheele crowne thee with
felicite.

Fort. Oh, whither am I wrap't beyond my selfe?
More violent conflicts fight in e'rie thought,
Than his whose fatall choice Troyes downfall wrought.
Shall I contract my selfe to wifedomes loue?
Then I lose riches: And a wiseman poore,
Is like a sacred booke thats neuer read,
To himselfe he liues, and to all els seemes dead.
This age thinks better of a gilded foole,
Then of a threedbare Saint in wifedomes schoole.
I will be strong: then I refuse long life,
And though mine arme should conquer twentie worlds,
Theres a leane fellow beates all conquerours:
The greatest strength expires with losse of breath.
The mightiest (in one minute) stoope to death.
Then take long life, or Health: should I doe so,
I might grow vgly, and that tedious Scrole
Of Months and yeeres, much miserie may enrol:

Therefore ile beg for beautie ; yet I will not,
 That fairest cheeke hath oftentimes a foule
 Leaprous as sinne it felfe ; then hell more foule.
 The wisedome of this world is Idiotisme,
 Strength a weake reede : Health sicknesse enemie,
 (And it at length will haue the victorie.)
 Beautie is but a painting, and long life
 Is a long iorney in December gon,
 Tedious and full of tribulation.
 Therefore dread sacred Empresse make me rich,
Kneele downe.

My choice is store of gold ; the rich are wise.
 He that vpon his backe rich garments weares,
 Is wise, though on his head grow Midas eares.
 Gold is the strength, the sinnewes of the world,
 The Health, the foule, the beautie most diuine,
 A maske of Gold hides all deformities ;
 Gold is heauens phisicke, lifes restorative,
 Oh therefore make me rich : Not as the wretch,
 That onely serues leane banquets to his eye,
 Has Gold, yet starues : is faint in his store :
 No, let me euer spend, be neuer poore.
Fortune. Thy latest words confine thy destinie,
 Thou shalt spend euer, and be neuer poore :
 For prooue receiue this purse : with it this vertue,
 Still when thou thrusts thy hand into the same,
 Thou shalt draw forth ten pieces of bright gold,
 Currant in any Realme where then thou breathest ;
 If thou can'st dribble out the Sea by drops,
 Then shalt thou want : but that can nere be don,
 Nor this grow emptye.

Fortanat. Thankes, great deitie.

Fortune. The vertue ends when thou and thy
 sonnes end.

This path leades thee to Cyprus, get thee hence ;
 Farewel, vaine couetous foole, thou wilt repent,
 That for the loue of drosse thou hast despised
 Wifedomes diuine embrace, she would haue borne thee
 On the rich wings of immortalitie ;

But now goe dwell with cares and quickly die.

The Kings. We dwell with cares, yet cannot quickly die.

Exeunt all singing, manet Fortunatus.

Fortunat. But now goe dwell with cares and quickly die? How quickly? if I die to morrow, ile be merrie to day: if next day, ile be merrie to morrow: goe dwell with cares? Where dwels care? Hum ha, in what house dwels care, that I may choose an honefter neighbor? In princes courts? No, among faire Ladies, neither, theres no care dwels with them: but care how to be most gallant. Among gallants then? Fie, fie, no: care is afraid sure of a guilt Rapier, the sent of Muske is her prison, Tobacco choakes her, rich attire presseth her to death. Princes, faire Ladies and gallants, haue amongst you then, for this wet eide wench Care dwelles with wretches: they are wretches that feelee want, I shall feelee none if I be neuer poore, therefore care I casheire you my companie. I wonder what blind Gossip this minx is that is so prodigall, she should be a good one by her open dealing: her name's Fortune: Its no matter what she is, so she does as she saies. *Thou shalt spend euer, and bee neuer poore:* Masse, yet I feelee nothing here to make mee rich, heres no sweete Musicke with her siluer sound. Trie deeper: ho God be here: Ha, ha, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9 and 10, good, iust ten. Its gold sure, its so heauie, trie againe, 1, 2, &c. Good againe, iust ten, and iust ten. Ha, ha, ha, this is rare: a leather mint, admirable: Ile fill three or fowre bagges full for my sonnes, but keepe this for my selfe. If that leane tawnie face Tobacconist death, that turnes all into smoke, must turne me so quickly into ashes, yet I will not mourne in ashes, but in Musicke, hey old lad be merrie. Heres riches, wifdome, strength, health, beautie, and long life. (If I die not quickly, sweete purse I kisse thee, Fortune, I adore thee Care, I despise thee, death, I defie thee.

Enter Ampedo, Shaddow after him, both sad: Andolucia after them.

Andelo. Shart, why how now : two knights of the post ?

Shad. I, master, and wee are both forsworne, as all such wooden knights be, for we both tooke an oath (mary it was not corporall) you may see by our cheekes, that we would not fast twentie fowre houres to amend, and we haue tasted no meate since the clocke told two dozen.

Andel. That lackes not much of twentie fowre, but I wonder when that halfe faced Moone of thine will be at the ful.

Sha. The next quarter, not this, when the signe is in Taurus.

Andel. Ho thats to say, when thou eat'st bull biefe. But Shadow, what day is to day ?

Shad. Fasting day.

Andel. What day was yester-day ?

Shad. Fasting day too.

Andel. Will to morrow be so too ?

Shad. I, and next day too.

Andel. That will be rare, you flaue :
For a leane dyet makes a fat wit.

Shad. I had rather be a foole & weare a fat paire of cheekes.

Andel. Now am I powder of this pouertie, which I know is mine owne, then a wayting gentlewoman is, of a frizled groatefworth of haire, that neuer grewe on her head : Sirrha Shadow, now we can all three sweare like puritans at one bare word : this want makes vs like good bowlers, we are able to rub out and shift in euery^r place.

Shad. Thats not so, we haue shifted our selues in no place this three moneths : marrie, we rub out in euery corner, but here followes no amendement either of life or of liuerie.

Andel. Why, brother Ampedo, art thou not yet

tir'd with riding post ? Come, come, light from this logger-headed Jade, and walke afoote, and talke with your poore friends.

Shad. Nay by my troth he is like me : if his belly be emptie, his heart is full.

Andelo. The famine of Gold gnawes his couetous stomacke, more then the want of good victuals : Thou hast lookt very deuilishly euer since the good Angel left thee : come, come, leaue this broad brim fashions, because the world frownes vpon thee, wilt not thou smile vpon vs ?

Amped. Did but the bitternes of mine owne fortunes

Infect my taste, I could paint ore my cheekes
With ruddy-coloured smiles : tis not the want
Of costly dyet or desire of gold,
Inforce this rupture in my wounded breft.
Oh no, our Father (if he liue) doth lie
Under the Iron foote of miserie,
And (as a Doue gript in a Faulcons claw)
There pant' th for life being most assur'd of death.
Brother, for him my foule thus languisheth.

Shad. Tis not for my old Master that I languish.

Amped. I am not enamoured of this painted Idoll,
This strumpet world ; for her most beautilous looks
Are poyned baits, hung vpon golden hookes.
When fooles doe swim in wealth, her Cynthia beames
Will wantonly daunce on the siluer streames :
But when this squinteide age sees vertue poore,
And by a little sparke sits shiuering,
Begging at all, relieu'd at no mans doore,
She smiles on her (as the Sunne shines on fire)
To kill that little heate, and with her frowne
Is proud, that she can treade poore vertue downe :
Therefore her wrinckled brow makes not mine fowre,
Her gifts are toyes, and I deride her power.

Shad. Tis not the crab-tree fac'd world neither that makes mine fowre.

Andelo. Her gifts toyes : wel brother vertue, we

haue let slip the ripe plucking of those toyes so long, that wee florish like Apple trees in September, (which hauing the falling sicknes) beare neither fruit nor leaues.

Shad. Nay by my troth, master, none flourish in these withering times, but Auncient bearers and trumpettors.

Andelo. Shaddow, when thou prouest a substance, then the tree of vertue and honestie, and such fruit of heauen shall florish vpon earth.

Shad. True, or when the Sunne shines at mid-night, or women flie, and yet they are light enough.

Andelo. Twas neuer merie world with vs, since purses and bags were inuented, for now men set lime twigges to catch wealth : And gold, which ryseth like the funne out of the East Indies, to shine vpon euery one, is like a Conie taken napping in a Purfenet, and suffers his gliftring yellow face deitie to be lapt vp in Lambskins, as if the innocencie of those leather pri-fons, should dispence with the Cheuerill consciences of the Iron harted Jaylers.

Shad. Snudges may well be called Jaylers : for if a poore wretch steale but into a debt of tenne pound, they leade him straight to execution.

Andel. Doth it not vex thee, Shaddow, to stalke vp and downe Cyprus, and to meete the out-side of a man, lapt all in Damaske, his head and beard as white as milke, onely with coniuring in the snowie circles of the field Argent, and his nose as red as Scarlet, onely with kissing the ruddie lippes of Angels, and such an Image to weare on his thumbe, three mens liuings in the shape of a seale Ring, whilst my brother vertue here,

Shad. And you his brother Vice.

Andel. Most true, my little leane Iniquitie, whilst wee three, if we should starue, cannot borrow five shillings of him neither in word nor deede : does not this vex thee, Shaddow ?

Shad. Not me ; it vexes me no more to seee such

a picture, then to see an Asse laden with riches, because I know when hee can beare no longer, he must leaue his burthen to some other beast.

Andel Art not thou mad, to see money on Goldsmithes stalles, and none in our purses ?

Shad. It mads not me, I thanke the destinies.

Andel. By my pouertie, and thats but a threed-bare oath, I am more then mad, to see silkes and veluets, lie crowding together in Mercers shops, as in prifons, onely for feare of the smell of waxe (they cannot abide to see a man made out of waxe) for these Satten commodities haue such smooth consciences, that theile haue no man giue his word for them, or stand bownd for their comming forth, but vow to lie till they rot in those shop Counters, except Monsieur money baile them. Shaddow, I am out of my little wits to see this.

Shad. So is not Shaddow: I am out of my wits, to see fat gluttons feede all day long, whilst I that am leane, fast euery day: I am out of my wits, to see our Famagosta fooles, turne halfe a shop of wares into a suite of gay apparrell, onely to make other Ideots laugh, and wise men to crie who's the foole now? I am mad, to see Souldiours beg, and cowards braue: I am mad, to see Schollers in the Brokers shop, and Dunces in the Mercers: I am mad, to see men that haue no more fashon in them then poore Shaddow, yet must leape thrice a day into three orders of fashions: I am mad, to see many things, but horne-mad, that my mouth feeles nothing.

Andel. Why, now shaddow, I see thou hast a substance: I am glad to see thee thus mad.

Ampegd. The sonnes of Fortunatus had not wont, Thus to repine at others happines:
But fooles haue alwaies this loose garment wore,
Being poore themselues, they wish all others poore,
Fie, brother Andelocia, hate this madnes,
Turne your eyes inward, and behold your soule,
That wants more then your body: burnish that



With glittering Vertue : and make Ideots grieue,
To see your beautilous mind in wisedome shine,
As you at their rich pouertie repine.

Enter Fortunatus gallant.

And. Peace, good vertue, Shad. here comes another Shadow.

Shad. It should be a Camelion : for he is all in colours.

Amp. Oh, tis my Father. With these teares of ioye,

My loue and duetie greete your faire returne :
A double gladnesse hath refresht my foule ;
One, that you liue, and one, to see your fate
Lookes freshly howsoever poore in state.

And. My father Fortunatus, & thus braue !

Sha. Tis no wonder to see a man braue, but a wonder how he comes braue.

Fortunat. Deere Andelocia and sonne Ampedo,
And my poore seruant Shaddow : plume your spirits
With light-wingd mirth : for Fortunatus hand
Can now powre golden showers into their laps,
That sometimes scorn'd him for his want of gold.
Boyes, I am rich, and you shall ne're be poore ;
Weare gold, spend gold, we all in gold will feede,
Now is your father Fortunate indeede.

Andel. Father, be not angrie, if I set open the windowes of my mind : I doubt for all your bragging, you're prooue like most of our gallants in Famagosta, that haue a rich outside, & a beggerly inside, and like Mules weare gay trappings, and good Veluet foote-clothes on their backes, yet champe on the Iron bitte of penurie, I meane, want coyne : You gild our cares with a talke of Gold, but I pray dazell our eyes with the maiestie of it.

Fort. First will I wake your senses with the sound

Of golds sweete musicke : tell me what you heare !

Amp. Belieue me, Sir, I heare not any thing.

Andel. Ha, ha, ha. S'hart, I thought as much, if I heare any ginging, but of the purse strings that goe flip, flap, flip, flap, flip, flap, would I were turnd into a flip-flap, and folde to the Butchers.

Fort. Shaddow: Ile trie thine eares, harke, dost rattle?

Shad. Yes, like three blew Beanes in a blew bladder, rattle bladder, rattle: your purse is like my bellie, th'ones without money, th'other without meate.

Fort. Bid your eyes blame the error of your eares: You misbeleeuing Pagans, fee, heres gold, Ten golden pieces: take them, Ampedo.

Hold, Andelocia, here are ten for thee.

Amp. Shaddow, theres one for thee, prouide thee foode.

Fort. Stay, boy: hold, Shad. here are ten for thee.

Shad. Ten master? then defiaunce to Fortune, & a Fig for famine.

Fort. Now tell me, wags, hath my purse gold or no?

Andel. Wee the wags haue gold, Father; but I thinke theres not one Angell more wagging in this sacred Temple; why this is rare: Shaddow, fiew will serue thy turne, giue me th' other fiew.

Shad. Nay, soft master, liberalitie dyed long agoe: I see some rich beggers are neuer well, but when they be crauing: My ten Duckets are like my ten fingers, they will not ieopard a ioynt for you: I am yours, and these are mine if I part from them, I shall neuer haue part of them.

Amp. Father, if heauen haue blest you once againe,
Let not an open hand disperse that store;
Which gone, lifes gone; for all treade downe the poore.

Fort. Peace, Ampedo: talke not of pouertie, Disdaine, my boyes, to kisse the tawnie cheekes
Of leane necessitie: make not inquirie,
How I came rich: I am rich, let that suffice;

There are fowre leathern bags trust full of gold:
 Those spent, ile fill you more : goe lads, be gallant :
 Shine in the streetes of Cyprus like two starres,
 And make them bow their knees that once did spurne
 you ;

For to effect such wonders gold can turne you :
 Braue it in Famagosta, or els where,
 Ile trauell to the Turkish Emperour :
 And then ile reuell it with Prester John,
 Or banquet with great Cham of Tartarie,
 And trie what frolicke Court the Souldan keepes ;
 Ile leaue you presently : teare off these rags.
 Glitter, my boyes, like Angels, that the world
 May (whilst our life in pleasures circle romes)
 Wonder at Fortunatus and his sonnes.

Andel. Come, Shaddow : now wee'le feast it
 royally.

Shad. Doe, master, but take heede of beggerie.

Exeunt.

*Musick sounds: Enter vice with a gilded face, and
 hornes on her head: her garments long, painted be-
 fore with siluer halfe moones, increasing by litle and
 litle, till they come to the full: in the midst of them
 in Capitall letters this written: CRESCIT
 EVNDO: her garment painted behind with fooles
 faces & diuels heads: and vnderneath it in the
 midst this written, Ha, Ha, He: she and others
 wearing gilded visards, and attirde like deuils,
 bring out a faire tree of Gold with apples on it:
 after her comes Vertue, a coxecombe on her head, all
 in white before, and this written about the middle:
 Sibi sapit: her attire behind painted with Crownes,
 and Laurell garlands, stuck full of starres, held out
 by hands, thrust out of bright cloudes, and among
 them this written: Dominabitur astris: Shee and
 other Nymphes all in white with coxcombs on
 their heads, bring a tree with greene and withered
 leaues mingled together, and litle fruit on it: after*

*her Fortune, one bearing her Wheele, another her
Globe; and last, the Priest.*

Fortune. You ministers of Vertue, Vice, and Fortune,
Teare off this vpper garment of the earth,
And in her naked bosome flicke these trees.

Vertue. How many kingdomes haue I measured,
Onely to find a Climat, apt to cherish
These withering braunches ! but no ground can prooue
So happie ; (ay mee) none doe vertue loue ;
Ile trie this foyle ; if here I like wise fade,
To heauen ile flie, from whence I tooke my birth,
And tel the Gods, I am banisht from the earth.

Vice. Vertue, I am sworne thy foe : if there thou
plant,
Here opposite to thine, my tree shall florish,
And (as the running wood-bind) spread her armes,
To choke thy withering boughes in their embrace,
Ile driue thee from this world : were Vertue fled,
Vice as an Angell should be honoured.

Fort. Seruants of this bright diuell & and that
poore Saint,
Applie your taske whilst you are labouring :
To make your paines seeme short our priest shall sing.

*The song : whilst he sings, the rest set the trees into the
earth.*

Priest, Vertues braunches wither, vertue pines,
O pittie, pittie, and alacke the time,
Vice doth flourish, Vice in glorie shines,
Her gilded boughs about the Cedar clime,
Vice hath golden cheekes, O pittie, pittie,
She in euery land doth monarchize.
Vertue is exile from euery Cittie,
Vertue is a foole, Vice onely wise.
O pittie, pittie, Vertue weeping dies.
Vice laughs to see her faint (alacke the time)
This sinckes : with painted wings the other
flies,

Alacke that best should fall, and bad should
clime,

O pittie, pittie, pittie, mourne, not sing,
Vice is a Saint, Vertue an vnderling.
Vice doth florish, Vice in glorie shines,
Vertues braunches wither, Vertue pines.

Fort. Florish or wither, Fortune cares not which,
In eithers fall or height our Eminence
Shines equall to the Sunne: the Queene of chance
Both vertuous foules and vicious doth aduance.
These shadowes of your felues shall (like your felues,)
Striue to make men enamoured of their beauties,
This groue shall be our temple; and henceforth
Be consecrated to our deities.

Vert. How few will come and kneel at vertues
shrine?

Vice. This contents vertue, that she is cal'd diuine.

Fort. Poore Vertue, Fortune grieues to see thy
lookes

Want cunning to intice: Why hang these leaues,
As loose as Autumnes haire (which euery wind,
In mockerie blowes from his rotten browes?)
Why like a drunkard art thou pointed at?
Why is this Motley-scorne set on thy head?
Why stands thy Court wide open, but none in it?
Why are the Christall pauements of thy temple,
Not worne, not trod vpon? All is for this,
Because thy pride is to weare base attire,
Because thine eyes flame not with amorous fire.

Vert. Vertue is fairest in a poore aray.

Fort. Poore foole, tis not this badge of puritie,
Nor *Sibi sapit*, (painted on thy breast,)
Allures mortalitie to seeke thy loue.
No: now the great wheele of thy Globe hath runne,
And met his first point of creation.
On Crutches went this world but yester-day,
Now it lies bed-rid, and is growne so old,
That its growne young; for tis a child againe,
A childish foule it hath, tis a meere foole:

And fooles and children are well pleasde with toyes :
 So must this world, with shewes it must be pleased,
 Then Vertue, buy a golden face like Vice,
 And hang thy bosome full of siluer Moones,
 To tell the credulous world, As those increase,
 As the bright Moone swelles in her pearled Spheare,
 So wealth and pleasures them to heauen shall reare.

Vert. Vertue abhorres to weare a borrowed face.

Vice. Why hast thou borrowed then that Idiots
 hood?

Vert. Fooles plac'd it on my head that knew me
 not,

And I am proud to weare the scorne of fooles.

Fort. Mourne in that pride & die, all the world
 hates thee.

Vert. Not all, ile wander once more through the
 world :

Wisedome I know hath with her blessed wings
 Fled to some bosome : if I meete that brest,
 There ile erect my temple, and there rest.
 Fortune nor Vice, shall then ere haue the power,
 (By their loose eyes) to intice my Paramour ;
 Then will I cast off this deformitie,
 And shine in glorie, and triumph to see
 Your conquerd at my feete, that tread on me.

Fort. Vertue begins to quarrell : Vice, farewell.

Vice. Stay, Fortune, whilst within this Groue we
 dwel,

If my Angelicall and Saint-like forme
 Can win some amorous foole to wanton here,
 And taste the fruite of this alluring tree,
 Thus shall his sawcie browes adorned bee,
 To make vs laugh.

Makes hornes.

Fort. It will be rare : adiew,

Ver. Foule hel-bred fiend, Vertue shall strue with
 you,

If any be enamoured of thine eyes,
 Their loue must needes beget deformities.
 Men are transformed to beastes, feasting with sinne ;

But if (in spite of thee) their soules I winne,
To taste this fruite, though thou disguise their head,
Their shapes shall be re-metamorphosed.

Vice. I dare thee doe thy worst.

Ver. My best ile trie.

Fort. Fortune shall iudge who winnes the soue-
raigntie. *Exeunt.*

Enter Chorus.

Chorus. The world to the circumference of heauen,
Is as a small point in Geometrie,
Whose greatnes is so little, that a lesse
Cannot be made : into that narrow roome,
Your quicke imaginations we must charme,
To turne that world : and (turn'd) againe to part it
Into large kingdomes, and within one moment,
To carrie Fortunatus on the wings
Of actiue thought, many a thousand miles.
Suppose then since you last beheld him here,
That you haue saild with him vpon the seas,
And leapt with him vpon the Asian shores,
Beene feasted with him in the Tartars palace,
And all the Courts of each Barbarian kings :
From whence (being cald by some vnluckie starre,)
(For happines neuer continues long,)
Helpe me to bring him backe to Arragon :
Where for his pride (Riches make all men proude)
On flight quarrell, by a couetous Earle,
Fortunes deere minion is imprisoned ;
There thinke you see him fit with folded armes,
Teares dropping downe his cheekes, his white haire
torne,
His legges in rustie fetters, and his tongue
Bitterly curfing that his squint-eide soule
Did not make choice of wisedomes sacred loue,
Fortune (to triumph in vnconflancie,)
From prison bailes him, (libertie is wild)
For being fet free, he like a lustie Eagle,
Cuts with his ventrous feathers through the skie,

And lights not till he find the Turkish court.
Thither transport your eyes, and there behold him,
Reuelling with the Emperour of the East,
From whence (through feare) for safegard of his life,
(Flying into the armes of vgly night,)
Suppose you see him brought to Babylon ;
And that the Sunne (clothed all in fire) hath rid
One quarter of his hot celestiaall way
With the bright morning, and that in this instant,
He and the Soldan meete, but what they say,
Listen you, the talke of Kings none dare bewray.

Exit.

Enter the Souldan, his Noblemen, and Fortunatus.

Sould. Art thou that Fortunatus, whose great name,
Being carried in the Charriot of the winds,
Hast fild the Courts of all our Asian kings,
With loue and enuie, whose deere preface tyes
The eyes of admiration to thine eyes ?
Art thou that Ioue that in a shower of gold
Appearedst before the Turkish Emperour ?

Fortunat. I am that Fortunatus, mightie Souldan.

Sould. Where is that purse which threw abroad
such treasure ?

Fort. I gaue it to the Turkish Soliman,
A second I bestowed on Prester Iohn,
A third the great Tartarian Cham receiued :
For with these Monarches haue I banquetted,
And rid with them in triumph through their courts,
In christall Charriots drawne by Unicornes.
England, Fraunce, Spaine, and welthy Belgia,
And all the rest of Europs blessed daughters,
Haue made my couetous eye rich in th' embrace
Of their celestiaall beauties ; now I come,
To see the glorie of faire Babylon.
Is Fortunatus wel-come to the Soldan ?
For I am like the Sunne, if Ioue once chide,
My gilded browes from amorous heauen I hide.

Sould. Most welcome, and most happie are mine
armes

In circling such an earthly deitie ;
But will not Fortunatus make me blessed
By sight of such a purse !

Fort. Ere I depart,
The Soldan shall receiue one at my hands :
For I must spend some time in framing it,
And then some time to breathe that vertuous spirit
Into the heart thereof, all which is don
By a most sacred inspiration.

Sould. Wel-come, most welcome to the Soldans
court ;

Stay here and be the king of Babylon,
Stay here, and I will more amaze thine eyes
With wondrous sights, then can all Asia :
Behold yon towre, there stands mine Armourie,
In which are Corsets forg'd of beaten gold,
To arme ten hundred thousand fighting men,
Whose glittering squadrons when the Sunne beholds,
They seeme like to ten hundred thousand Ioues, &
When Ioue on the proude backe of thunder rydes,
Trapt all in lightning flames : there can I shew thee
The ball of gold that fet all Troy on fire ;
There shalt thou see the skarfe of Cupids mother,
Snatcht from the soft moyst Iuorie of her arme,
To wrap about Adonis wounded thigh,
There shalt thou see a wheele of Titans care,
Which dropt from heauen when Phaeton fir'd the
world :

Ile giue thee (if thou wilt) two siluer Doues
Compos'd by Magicke to diuide the ayre,
Who (as they flie) shall clap their siluer wings,
And giue straunge musicke to the Elements ;
Ile giue thee els the fanne of Proserpine,
Which in reward (for a sweete Thracian song,)
The black-browd Empresse threw to Orpheus,
Being come to fetch Euridice from hell.

Fort. Hath euer mortall eye beheld these wonders ?

Sould. Thine shall behold them, and make choice of any,

So thou wilt giue the Souldan such a purse.

Fort. By Fortunes blessed hand (who christned me)

The mightie Souldan shall haue such a purse,
Provided I may see these prizelesse wonders.

Sould. Leaue vs alone : neuer was mortal eare

Excunt Nobles.

Acquainted with the vertue of a Jewell,
Which now ile shew, (out-valuing all the rest.)

Fort. It is impossible.

Sould. Behold this Casket,—*Draw a Curtaine.*

Fettered in golden chaines, the Lock pure gold,
The key of follide gold, which my felse keepe,
And heres the treasure thats contained in it.

Takes out the Hat.

Fort. A course felt Hat ? is this the precious Jewell ?

Sould. Ile not exchange this, for ten Diadems.
On paine of death, none listen to our talke.

Fort. What needes this solemne coniuration !

Sould. O, yes, for none shall vnderstand the worth
Of this inestimable ornament,

But you : and yet not you, but that you sweare
By her white hand, that lent you such a name,
To leaue a wondrous purse in Babylon.

Fort. What I haue sworne, I will not violate,
But now vncouer the vertues of this Hatte.

Sould. I thinke none listen ; if they doe, they die.

Fort. None listen : tell : what needes this iealousie ?

Sould. You see tis poore in shew ; did I want Jewels,

Gold could beget them, but the wide worlds wealth
Byes not this Hat ; this clapt vpon my head,
I (onely with a wish) am through the ayre,
Transported in a moment ouer Seas,

And ouer lands to any secrete place ;
 By this I steale to euery Princes court,
 And heare their priuate counsels and preuent
 All daungers which to Babylon are meant.
 By helpe of this I oft see armies ioyne,
 Though when the dreadfull Aluarado founds,
 I am distant from the place a thousand leagues,
 Oh, had I such a purse and such a Hat,
 The Souldan were, of all, most fortunate.

Fort. Oh, had I such a Hat, then were I braue.
 Wheres he that made it ?

Sould. Dead, and the whole world
 Yeelds not a workman that can frame the like.

Fort. No does ? by what trick shal I make this
 mine ? *Aside.*

Me thinkes, me thinkes, when you are borne o're Seas,
 And ouer lands, the heauinesse thereof
 Should waigh you downe, drowne you, or breake your
 necke.

Sould. No, tis more light then any Hat beside :
 Your hand shall peise it.

Fort. Oh, tis wondrous heanie.

Sould. Fie, ya're deceau'd : trie it vpon your head.

Fort. Would I were now in Cyprus with my sons.
Exit.

Sould. Stay, Fortunatus, stay, I am vndone.
 Treason, Lords, treason, get me wings, ile flie
 After this damn'd Traytor through the ayre.

Enter Nobles.

Nob. Who wrongs the mightie king of Babylon ?

Sould. This Fortunatus, this fiend wrongs your
 king.

Nobl. Locke the Court gates, where is the dinell
 hid ?

Sould. No gates no grates of Iron imprison him,
 Like a Magician breakes he through the clouds,
 Bearing my soule with him, for that Iewell gon,

I am dead, and all is drosse in Babylon.
 Flie after him, tis vaine, on the winds wings,
 Heele ride through all the Courts of earthly kings.

Nobl. What is the Iewell that your grace hath lost ?

Sould. He dies that troubles me : call me not
 king ;

For ile confume my life in forrowing. *Exeunt.*

Enter Andelocia very gallant, and Shaddow.

Andel. Shaddow ? what haue I lost to day at dice ?

Shad. More then you will win againe in a month.

Andel. Why sir, how much comes it to ?

Shad. It comes to nothing, Sir, for you haue lost
 your wits, and when a mans wittes are lost, the man is
 like twentie poundes worth of Tobacco, which mounts
 into th' aire, and prooues nothing but one thing.

Andel. And what thing is that, you Affe ?

Shad. Marrie sir, that he is an asse that melts so
 much money in smoke.

Andel. Twere a charitable deed to hang thee a
 smoking.

Shad. I should neuer make good bacon, because I
 am not fat.

Andel. Ile besworne thy wit is leane.

Shad. Its happie I haue a leane wit : but master,
 you haue none ; for when your money tript away, that
 went after it, and euer since you haue beene mad ; here
 com's your brother ; borrowe a dramme of him.

Enter Ampedo.

If his be not mouldie : for mens wits in these daies,
 Are like the Cuckoo, bald once a yeere, and that
 makes Motley so deere, and fooles so good cheape.

Andel. Brother, all haile.

Shad. There's a ratling salutation.

Andel. You must lend me some more money :
 Nay neuer looke so straunge, and you will come off, so :
 if you will barne me from square play, doe : come

come, when the old traeller my Father comes home, like a young Ape, full of fantasticke trickes, or a painted Parrat stucke full of outlandish feathers, heele leade the world in a string, and then (like a hot shot) Ile charge and discharge all.

Shad. I would be loth, master, to see that day: for he leades the world in a string that goes to hanging.

And. Take heede I turne not that head into the world, and leade you so?

Brother wilt be: Hay any ends of Gold or Siluer?

Amp. Thus wanton reuelling breedes beggerie.

Brother, twere better that you still liu'd poore.

Want would make wisedome rich: but when your
Coffers

Swell to the brim, then royt sets vp fayles,
And like a desperate vnskild Mariner
Driues your vnsteddie fortunes on the point
Of wracke ineuitable; of all the wealth,
Left (by our Father, when he left vs last)
This little is vnspent, and this being wafted,
Your ryot ends; therefore consume it all,
Ile liue; or dying, find some buriall.
Thankes for my crownes.

Andel. Shaddow, I am villainous hungrie, to heare one of the feuen wise Masters talke thus emptily.

Shad. I am a villaine, master, if I am not hungrie.

Andel. Because ile saue this gold, firra Shaddowe, weele feede our selues with Paradoxes.

Shad. Oh rare: what meat's that?

Andel. Meate, you gull: tis no meate: a dish of Paradoxes is a feast of straunge opinion, tis an ordinarie that our greatest gallants haunt nowadaies, because they would be held for Statefmen.

Shad. I shall neuer fil my belly with opinions.

And. In despite of fway-bellies, gluttons, & sweet mouth'd Epicures, Ile haue thee maintaine a Paradox in commendations of hunger.

Shad. I shall neuer haue the stomacke to doo't.

And. Seeſt thou this Cruſado? do it, & turne this
into a feaſt.

Shad. Couetouſneſſe and lecherie are two diuels,
they le tempt a man to wade through deepe matters :
He doo't though good cheare coſpire my death, for
ſpeaking treaſon againſt her.

Andel. Fall to it then with a full mouth.

Shad. Oh famine, inſpire me with thy miſerable
reaſons.

I begin, maſter.

Amp. O miſerable inuocation.

Andel. Silence.

Shad. Thereſ no man but loues one of theſe three
beaſtes, a Horſe, a Hound, or a Whore ; the Horſe
by his goodwill, has his head euer in the maunger ;
the Whore with your ill will has her hand euer in your
purſe ; and a hungrie Dogge eates durtie puddings.

Andel. This is profound, forward : the conſclusion
of this now.

Shad. The conſclusion is plaine : For ſince all men
loue one of theſe three monſters, being ſuch terrible
eaters, therefore all men loue hunger.

Amp. A very leane argument.

Shad. I can make it no fatter.

Andel. Proceede, good Shaddow ; this fats me.

Shad. Hunger is made of Gun-powder.

Andel. Giue fire to that opinion.

Shad. Stand by, leſt it blow you vp : hunger is
made of Gun-powder, or Gun-powder of hunger ; for
they both eate through ſtone walles ; hunger is a
grindſtone, it ſharpens wit, hunger is fuller of loue
then Cupid, for it makes a man eate himſelfe ; hunger
was the firſt that euer open'd a Cookes ſhop ; Cookes
the firſt that euer made ſawce ; ſawce being lickeriſh,
lickes vp good meate ; good meate preferues life :
Hunger therefore preferues life.

Amp. By my conſent thou ſhouldeſt ſtill liue by
hunger.

Shad. Not ſo, hunger makes no man mortall :

hunger is an excellent Phyſition : for hee dares kill any body : hunger is one of the ſeuē liberall ſciences.

Andel. O learned ! Which of the ſeuē ?

Shad. Muſicke, for ſheelee make a man leape at a cruſt : but as few care for her fixe liſters, ſo none loue to daunce after her pipe : Hunger, maſter, is hungrie and couetous ; therefore the Cruſado.

Andel. But haſt thou no ſharper reaſons then this ?

Shad. Yes one : the dagger in Cyprus had neuer ſtabd out ſuch fixe penie pipes, but for hunger.

And. Why, you dolt, theſe pies are but in their minority.

Shad. My belly and my purſe haue beene twentie times at daggers drawing, with parting the little vrchins.

Enter Fortunatus.

Amp. Peace, Idiot, peace, my Father is return'd.

Fort. Touch mee not, boyes, I am nothing but ayre, let none ſpeake to me, till you haue markt me well.

Shad. Now ſpeake your mind.

Amp. Villaine, why haſt thou chalkt my Fathers backe ?

Shad. Onely to marke him, & to trie what colour aire is of.

Fort. Regard him not, Ampedo : Andelocia, Shaddowe : view me, am I as you are, or am I transform'd ?

And. I thought trauel would turne my father, mad man or foole.

Amp. How ſhould you be transform'd I ſee no chaunge.

Shad. If your wits be not planet ſtrucken, if your braines lie in their right place, you are well inough ; for your body is little mended by your fetching ſegaries.

Andel. Mee thinkes, father, you looke as you did, onely your face is more withered.

Fort. Thats not my fault, age is like loue, it cannot be hid.

Shad. Or like Gun-powder a fire, or like a foole, or like a young nouice new come to his lands : for all these will shew of what house they come : now sir, you may amplifie.

Fort. Shaddow, turne thy tongue to a shaddow, be silent : Boyes be proud, your Father hath the whole world in this compasse, I am all felicitie, vp to the brimmes. In a minute am I come from Babylon, I haue beene this half howre in Famagosta.

And. How? in a minute, father? Ha, ha, I see trauellers must lie.

Shad. Tis their destinie : the Fates doe so conspire.

Fort. I haue cut through the ayre like a Falcon ; I would haue it seeme straunge to you.

Shad. So it does, Sir.

Fort. But tis true : I would not haue you belieue it neither.

Shad. No more we doe not, Sir.

Fort. But tis miraculous & true : desire to see you, brought me to Cyprus ; ile leaue you more Gold, and goe visite more Countries.

Sha. Leaue vs gold inough, and wee le make all Countries come visit vs.

Amp. The frostie hand of age now nips your bloud,
And strowes her snowie flowers vpon your head,
And giue you warning that within few yeeres,
Death needes must marrie you : those short liues
minutes,

That dribble out your life, must needes be spent,
In peace not trauell : rest in Cyprus then.
Could you suruaie ten worlds, yet you must die ;
And bitter is the sweete thats reapt thereby.

And. Faith father, what pleasure haue you met by walking your stations?

Fort. What pleasure, boy? I haue reueld with kings, daunc'd with Queenes, dallied with Ladies, worne straunge attires, seene fantasticoes, conuerst with

humorists, beene rauisht with diuine raptures of Dorick,
Lidian and Phrigian harmonies, I haue spent the day
in triumphes, and the night in banquetting.

Andel. Oh rare : this was heavenly.

Shad. Me thinkes t'was horrible.

Andel. He that would not be an Arabian Phenix
to burne in these sweete fires, let him liue like an
Owle for the world to wonder at.

Amp. Why, brother, are not all these vanities ?

Fort. Vanities ? Ampedo, thy soule is made of
lead, too dull, too ponderous to mount vp to the in-
comprehensible glorie, that trauell lifts men to.

Shad. My olde masters soule is Corke and feathers,
and being so light doth easily mount vp.

Ande. Sweeten mine eares, good father, with some
more.

Fort. When in the warmth of mine owne countries
armes

We yawn'd like sluggards, when this small Horizon
Imprison'd vp my body, then mine eyes
Worshipt these clouds as brightest ; but, my boyes,
The glistring beames which doe abroad appeare,
(In other heauens) fire is not halfe so cleare.

Shad. Why, sir, are there other heauens in other
countries ?

Andel. Peace, interrupt him not vpon thy life.

For. For still in all the Regions I haue seene,
I scorn'd to crowd among the muddie throng
Of the rancke multitude, whose thickned breath,
Like to condensed Fogs doe choake that beautie,
Which els would dwell in euery kingdomes cheeke.
No, I still boldly stept into their Courts,
For there to liue tis rare, O tis diuine ;
There shall you see faces Angelicall,
There shall you see troopes of chaste Goddeffes,
Whose star-like eyes haue power, (might they still
shine)

To make night day, and day more christalline.
Neere these you shall behold great *Heroes*,

White headed Councillors and Jouiall spirites,
 Standing like fierie Cherubins to gard
 The Monarch, who in God-like glorie sits.
 In midst of these, as if this deitie
 Had with a looke created a new world ;
 The standers by, being the faire workmanship.

Andel. Oh how my soule is rapt to a third heauen.
 He trauell sure, and liue with none but kings.

Shad. Then Shaddow must die among knaues ;
 and yet why so ? in a bunch of Cards, knaues waite
 vpon the kings.

And. When I turne king, then shalt thou waite
 on me.

Shad. Well, theres nothing impossible : a dog has
 his day, and so haue you.

Amp. But tell me, father, haue you in all courts
 Beheld such glorie, so maiesticall ?
 In all perfection ? no way blemished ?

Fort. In some Courts shall you see ambition
 Sit piecing Dedalus old waxen wings,
 But being clapt on, and they about to flie,
 Euen when their hopes are buied in the clouds,
 They melt against the Sunne of maiestie,
 And downe they tumble to destruction :
 For since the heauens strong armes teach kings to stand,
 Angels are plac'd about their glorious throne,
 To gard it from the strokes of Traitous hands.
 By trauell, boyes, I haue seene all these things,
 Fantafticke complement stalkes vp and downe,
 Trickt in out-landish Fethers, all his words,
 His lookes, his oathes, are all ridiculous,
 All apish, childish, and Italianate.

Enter Fortune : after her three destinies working.

Shad. I know a medicine for that maladie.

Fort. By trauell, beyes, I haue seene all these
 things.

Andel. And these are fighes for none, but gods &
 kings.

Shad. Yes, and for Christen creatures, if they be not blind.

Fort. In these two hands doe I gripe all the world.
This leather purse, and this bald woollen Hat
Make me a Monarch : heres my Crowne and Scepter.
In progresse will I now goe through the world,
Ile cracke your shoulders, boyes, with bags of gold
Ere I depart ; on Fortunes wings I ride,
And now sit in the height of humane pride.

Fortune. Now, foole, thou liest ; where thy proud
feete doe tread

These shal throw downe thy cold & breathlesse head.

Fort. O sacred deitie, what sinne is don,
That deaths Iron fist should wrestle with thy sonne ?

All kneele.

Fortune. Thou art no sonne of Fortune, but her
slawe :

Thy Cedar hath aspir'd to his full height.
Thy Sunne like glorie hath aduanc'd her selfe
Into the top of prides Meridian,
And downe amaine it comes. From beggerie
I plum'd thee like an Ostrich, like that Ostrich
Thou hast eaten Metals, and abusde my giftes,
Hast plaid the Ruffian, wasted that in ryots,
Which as a blessing I bestowed on thee.

Fort. Forgiue me, I will be more prouident.

Fortune. No, endlesse follies follow endlesse wealth.
Thou hadst thy fancie, I must haue thy fate,
Which is, to die when th'art most fortunate.
This inckie thread thy vgly finnes haue spun,
Blacke life, blacke death ; faster, that it were don.

Fort. Oh, let me liue, but till I can redeeme.

Fortune. The destinies denie thee longer life.

Fort. I am but now listd to happines.

Fortune. And now I take most pride to cast thee
downe.

Hadst thou chofen wisedome, this blacke had beene
white,

And deaths sterne browe could not thy foule afrigh t.

Fort. Take this againe: giue wifedome to my
sonnes.

Fortune. No, foole, tis now too late: as death
strikes thee,
So shall their ends sudder and wretched bee.
Ioues daughters (righteous destinies) make haste,
His life hath wastefull beene, and let it waste.

Exeunt.

Andel. Why the pox doest thou sweate so?

Shad. For anger to see any of Gods Creatures
haue such filthie faces as these Semsters had that went
hence.

Andel. Semsters? why, you aske, they are destinies.

Shad. Indeepe, if it bee ones destinie to haue a
filthie face, I know no remedie but to goe Maskt and
crie, Woe worth the Fates.

Amp. Why droopes my father? these are onely
shaddowes,
Raizd by the malice of some enemie,
To fright your life, o're which they haue no power.

Shad. Shaddowes? I defie their kinred.

Fort. O Ampedo, I faint; helpe me, my sonnes.

Andel. Shaddow, I pray thee runne and call more
helpe.

Shad. If that desperate Don Dego death hath
tane vp the Cudgels once, heres neuer a Fencer in
Cyprus dare take my old masters part.

Andel. Runne, villaine, call more helpe.

Shad. Bid him thanke the destinies for this. *Exit.*

Fort. Let me shrinke downe, & die betweene
your armes,
Helpe comes in vaine. No hand can conquer Fate,
This instant is the last of my lifes date.
This Goddesse (if at least shee be a goddesse)
Names her selfe Fortune: wandring in a wood,
Halfe famisht, her I met. I haue, quoth shee,
Sixe gifts to spend vpon mortalitie,
Wifedome, strength, health, beautie, long life and
riches.

Out of my bountie one of these is thine.

Amp. What benefit did from your choyce arise ?

Fort. Listen, my sonnes : In this small compasse
lies,

Infinite treasure : this shee gaue to mee,
And gaue to this, this vertue, Take (quoth shee)
So often as from hence thou drawst thy hand,
Ten golden peeces of that kingdomes coyne,
Where er'e thou liu'st, which plenteous sure shall last,
After thy death, till thy sonnes liues doe waste.

Andel. Father, your choice was rare, the gift
diuine.

Fort. It had beene so, if riches had beene mine.

Amp. But hath this golden vertue neuer faild ?

Fort. Neuer.

Andel. O admirable : heare's a fire

Hath power to thaw the very heart of death,
And giue stones life, by this most sacred death,
See brother, heres all India in my hand.

Fort. Inherite you (my Sonnes) that golden land.

This Hat I brought away from Babylon,
I robd the Souldan of it, tis a prize
Worth twentie Empires. In this Jewell lies.

Andel. How, father ? Jewell ? call you this a
Jewell ? It's course Wooll, a bald fashon, and greasie
to the brim ; I haue bought a better Felt for a
French crowne fortie times : Of what vertuous blocke
is this Hat, I pray ?

Fort. Set it vpon thy head, and wish a wish,
Thou in the moment on the winds swift wings,
Shalt be transported into any place.

Andel. A wishing Hat, and a golden mine ?

For. O Andelocia, Ampedo, now death
Sounds his third sommons : I must hence : these
Jewels

To both I doe bequeath ; diuide them not,
But vse them equally : neuer hewray
What vertues are in them ; for if you doe,

Much shame, much grieve, much daunger followes you.

Peruse this booke : farwell : behold in me

— The rotten strength of proud mortalitie. *Dys.*

Ampe. His foule is wandring to the Elizium shades.

Andel. The flowre thats fresh at noone, at Sun-set fades.

Brother, close you downe his eyes, because you were his eldest ; and with them close vp your teares, whilst I (as all yonger brothers doe) shift for my selfe : let vs mourne, because hees dead, but mourne the lesse, because he cannot reuiue : the honour we can doe him, is to burie him royally, lets about it then, for ile not melt my selfe to death with scalding sighes, nor drop my foule out at mine eyes, were my father an Emperour.

Amp. Hence, hence, thou stop'st the tide of my true teares.

True grieve is dumbe, though it hath open eares.

Andel. Yet God fend my grieve a tongue, that I may haue good vtterance for it : Sob on, brother mine, whilst you sigh there, ile sit & read what Storie my father has written here.

They both fall asleepe : Fortune and a companie of Satyres enter with Musicke, and playing about Fortunatus body, take them away ; They gone, Shaddow enters running.

Shad. I can get none, I can find none : where are you, master ? Haue I tane you napping ? and you too ? I see sorrowes eye-lids are made of a Dormouse skin, they seldome open, or of a misers purse, that's alwaies shut : So ho, master.

Andel. Shaddow, why how now ? whats the matter ?

Shad. I can get none Sir, tis impossible.

Amp. What is impossible ? what canst not get.

Shad. No helpe for my old master.

Andel. Haft thou beene all this while calling for helpe?

Sha. Yes fir: he scornd all Famagosta when he was in his huffing, and now hee lies puffing for wind, they say they scorne him.

Amp. The poyson of their scorne infects not him; He wants no helpe. See where he breathles lies: Brother, to what place haue you borne his body?

Andel. I beare it? I toucht it not.

Amp. Nor I: a leaden slumber prest mine eyes.

Shad. Whether it were lead or lattin that haspt downe those winking casements, I knowe not, but I found you both snorting.

Amp. And in that sleepe (me thought) I heard the tunes

Of fullen passions apt for Funerals,
And saw my Fathers liuelesse body borne
By Satyres: O I feare that deitie
Hath stolne him hence, that Snudge his destinie.

And. I feare hees ryfen againe, didst not thou meete him?

Shad. I fir? doe you thinke this white and red durst haue kist my sweete cheekes, if they had seene a ghost? But, master, if the destinies, or Fortune, or the Fates, or the Fayries haue stolne him, neuer indite them for the Felonie: for by this meanes the charges of a Tombe is fau'd, and you being his heyres, may doe as many rich Executors doe, put that money in your purses, and giue out that he dyed a begger.

Andel. Away, you Roague, my Father die a begger?

He build a Tombe for him of massie Gold.

Shad. Methinkes, master, it were better to let the memory of him shine in his owne vertues (if hee had any) than in Alablafter.

Andel. I shall mangle that Alablafter face, you whorefson vertuous vice.

Shad. He has a Marble heart, that can mangle a face of Alablafter.

Andel. Brother, come, come, mourne not, our Father is but slept to agree with Charon for his boate hyre to Elizium. See, heres a Storie of all his trauels; this booke shall come out with a new Addition: Ile treade after my Fathers steps; ile goe meafure the world, therefore lets share thefe Jewels, take this or this.

Amp. Will you then violate our Fathers Will?

Andel. A puritane! keepe a dead mans Will? Indeed in the old time, when men were buried in foft Church-yardes, that their Ghosts might rife, it was good: but, brother, now they are imprifond in ftrong Brick and Marble, they are faft: feare not: away, away, thefe are fooleries, gulleries, trumperies; heres this or this, or I am gon with both.

Amp. Doe you as you pleafe, the finne shall not be mine.

Foolles call thofe things prophane, that are diuine.

Andel. Are you content to weare the Jewels by turnes? Ile haue the purfe for a yeere, you the Hat, and as much gold, as youle afke; & when my purfourship ends, ile refigne, and cap you.

Amp. I am content to beare all difcontents. *Exit.*

Andel. I fhould ferue this bearing Affe rarely now, if I fhould load him, but I will not, though confcience bee (like Phyficke) feldome vfed, (for fo it does leaft hurt) yet ile take a dram of it: this for him, and fome gold: this for me: for hauing this mint about me, I fhall want no wifhing Cap: gold is an Eagle, that can flie to any place, and like death, that dares enter all places.

Shaddow, wilt thou trauell withme?

Sha. I fhall neuer fadge with the humor becaufe I cannot lie.

And. Thou dolt, weele vifit all the kings courts in the world.

Shad. So we may, and returne dolts home, but what shall we learne by trauaile?

Andel. Fafhions.

Shad. Thats a beaffly difeafe : me thinks its better faying in your owne countrie.

Andel. How ? In mine owne countrie ? like a Cage-birde and fee nothing ?

Shad. Nothing ? yes you may fee things enough, for what can you fee abroad that is not at home ? The fame Sunne cals you vp in the morning, and the fame man in the Moone lights you to bed at night, our fields are as greene as theirs in fummer, and their frofts will nip vs more in winter : Our birds fing as sweetly & our women are as faire : In other countries you fhall haue one drinke to you, whilst you kiffe your hand, and ducke, heele poyfon you : I confesse you fhall meete more fooles, and affes, and knaues abroad then at home (yet God be thanked we haue prettie flore of all) but for Puncckes, wee put them downe.

And. Prepare thy fpirits, for thou fhalt goe with me,

To England fhall our ftarres direct our courfe,
Thither the prince of Cyprus (our kings fonne)
Is gon to fee the louely Agripyne,
Shaddow, wee le gaze vpon that Englifh dame,
And trie what vertue gold has to inflame.
Firft to my brother, then away lets flie,
Shaddow muft be a Courtier ere he die.

Exit.

Shad. If I muft, the Fates fhall bee feru'd : I haue feene many clownes Courtiers, then why not Shaddow ? Fortune, I am for thee.

Exit.

Enter Orleans melancholike, Galloway with him, a boy after them with a Lute.

Orle. Be gone : leaue that with me, and leaue me to my felfe, if the King aske for me, fweare to him I am ficke, and thou fhalt not lie, pray thee leaue me.

Boy. I am gon, Sir.

Exit.

Orle. This musicke makes me but more out of tune.

O, Agripyna.

Gall. Gentle friend, no more.

Thou saiest loue is a madnes, hate it then,
Euen for the names sake.

Orle. O, I loue that madnes,
Euen for the names sake.

Gall. Let me tame this frenzie,
By telling thee thou art a prisoner here,
By telling thee shees daughter to a king,
By telling thee the king of Cyprus sonne
Shines like a Sunne, betweene her lookes and thine,
Whilst thou seem'st but a starre to Agripyne :
He loues her.

Orle. If he doe : why fo doe I.

Gall. Loue is ambitious and loues maiestie.

Orle. Deere friend, thou art deceiued, loues voice
doth sing

As sweetely in a begger as a king.

Gall. Deere friend, thou art decey'd : O bid thy
soule

Lift vp her intellectual eyes to heauen,
And (in this ample booke of wonders) read,
Of what celestiall mold, what sacred essence,
Her selfe is formd, the search whereof will driue
Sounds musically among the iarring spirits,
And in sweete tune set that which none inherits.

Orle. Ile gaze on heauen if Agripyne be there :
If not : Fa, La, la, Sol, la, &c.

Gall. O, call this madnes in, see from the win-
dowes

Of euery eye Derision thrusts out cheekes,
Wrinkled with Idiot laughter : euery finger
Is like a Dart shot from the hand of scorne,
By which thy name is hurt, thine honour torne.

Orle. Laugh they at me, sweete Galloway ?

Gall. Euen at thee.

Orle. Ha, ha, I laugh at them, are not they mad,

That let my true true forrow make them glad
 I daunce and sing onely to anger grieve,
 That in that anger, he might smite life downe
 With his Iron fist : good heart, it seemeth then,
 They laugh to see grieve kill me : O, fond men,
 You laugh at others teares, when others smile,
 You teare your selues in peeces : vile, vile, vile,
 Ha, ha, when I behold a swarme of fooles,
 Crowding together to be counted wise,
 I laugh because sweete Agripine's not there,
 But weepe because shee is not any where,
 And weepe because whether shee be or not,
 My loue was euer and is still forgot : forgot, forgot,
 forgot.

Gall. Draw backe this streame, why should my
 Orleans mourne ?

Orle. Looke yonder, Galloway, doest thou see that
 Sunne ?

Nay good friend, stare vpon it, marke it well,
 Ere he be two howres elder, all that glorie
 Is banisht heauen, and then (for grieve) this skie,
 That's now so iocund, will mourne all in blacke,
 And shall not Orleans mourne ? Alacke, alacke.
 O what a Sauage tyrannie it were
 T'inforce care, laugh and woe : not shed a teare ?
 Dead is my loue, I am buried in her scorne,
 That is my Sun-set, and shall I not mourne ?
 Yes by my troth I will.

Gall. Deere friend forbear,
 Beautie (like forrow) dwelleth euery where.
 Race out this strong Idea of her face,
 As faire as hers shineth in any place.

Orle. Thou art a Traytor to that white and red,
 Which sitting on her cheekes (being Cupids throne)
 Is my hearts soueraigne : O when shee is dead,
 This wonder (Beautie) shall be found in none.
 Now Agripyne's not mine, I vow to be
 In loue with nothing but deformitie.
 O faire Deformitie, I muse all eyes

Are not enamord of thee : thou didst neuer
Murder mens hearts, or let them pine like wax,
Melting against the Sunne of thy destinie,
Thou art a faithfull nurse to Chastitie,
Thy beautie is not like to Agripynes,
For cares, and age, and sicknesse hers deface,
But thine's eternall : O Deformitie,
Thy fairenes is not like to Agripynes,
For (dead) her beautie will no beautie haue,
But thy face lookes most louely in the graue.

Enter Prince of Cyprus and Agripyne.

Gall. See where they come together hand in hand.

Orle. O, watch sweete Galloway, when their hands doe part,
Betweene them, shalt thou find my murdred heart.

Cypr. By this then it seemes a thing impossible, to know when an English Lady loues truly.

Agrip. Not so, for when her soule steales into her heart, and her heart leapes vp to her eyes, and her eyes drop into her hands, then if shee say, Heres my hand, shees your owne, else neuer.

Cyp. Heres a paire of your prisoners, lets try their opinion.

Agrip. My kind prisoners well encountred, the Prince of Cyprus here and my selfe haue beene wrangling about a question of loue : my Lord of Orleans, you looke leane, and likest a louer ; Whether is it more torment to loue a Lady and neuer enioy her, or alwaies to enioy a Lady, whome you cannot choofe but hate ?

Orle. To hold her euer in mine armes whome I loath in my heart, were some plague, yet the punishment were no more then to be enioyned to keepe poyson in my hand, yet never to taste it.

Agri. But say you should be compeld to swallow the poyson ?

Orle. Then a speedy death would end a speeding miserie: But to loue a Lady and neuer enioy her, oh it is not death, but worfe then damnation; Tis hell, tis.

Agrip. No more, no more, good Orleans, nay then I see my prifoner is in loue too.

Cypr. Me thinkes, souldiers cannot fal into the fashion of loue.

Agrip. Me thinkes, a Souldier is the most faithfull louer of all men els: for his affection stands not vpon complement: his wooing is plaine home-spun stuffe; theres no outlandish thred in it, no Rethoricke: a Souldier casts no figures to get his mistris heart, his loue is like his valour in the field, when he payes downe-right blowes.

Gall. True, Madam, but would you receiue such paiment?

Agrip. No, but I meane, I loue a Souldier best, for his plaine dealing.

Cypr. Thats as good as the first.

Agrip. Be it so, that goodnesse I like: for what Lady can abide to loue a Spruce filken face Courtier, that stands euery morning two or three howres learning how to looke by his Glasse, how to speake by his Glasse, how to sigh by his glasse, how to court his Mistris by his Glasse. I would wish him no other plague, but to haue a Mistris as brittle as glasse.

Gall. And that were as bad as the horne plague.

Cypr. Are any louers posselt with this madnes?

Agrip. What madman are not posselt with this loue? yet by my troth, wee poore women doe but smile in our sleeves to see all this fopperie: yet we all desire to see our louers attirde gallantly, to heare them sing sweetely, to behold them daunce comely and such like; but this apish monkie fashion of effeminate nicenesse, out vpon it: Oh, I hate it worfe then to be counted a scould.

Cypr. Indeede men are most regarded, when they least regard themselues.

Gall. And women most honored, when they shew most mercy to their louers.

Orle. But ist not a miserable tyrānie, to see a Lady triumph in the passions of a soule languishing through her crueltie ?

Cypr. Me thinkes it is.

Gall. Me thinkes tis more then tyrannie.

Agrip. So thinke not I ; for as there is no reason to hate any that loue vs, so it were madnes to loue all that doe nothate vs ; women are created beautifull, onely because men should wooe them ; for twere miserable tyrannie to inioyne poore women to wooe men : I would not heare of a woman in loue for my fathers kingdome.

Cyp. I neuer heard of any woman that hated loue.

Agrip. Nor I : but we had all rather die then confesse wee loue ; our glorie is to heare men sigh whilst we smile, to kil them with a frowne, to strike them dead with a sharpe eye, to make you this day weare a Feather, and to morrow a sicke nightcap : Oh, why this is rare, there's a certaine deitie in this, when a Lady by the Magicke of her lookes, can turne a man into twentie shapes.

Orle. Sweete friend, shee speakes this but to torture mee.

Gall. Ile teach thee how to plague her : loue her not.

Agrip. Poore Orleans, how lamentably he lookes : if hee slay, heele make me surely loue him for pure pittie. I must send him hence, for of all fortes of loue, I hate the French ; I pray thee, sweet prisoner, intreate Lord Longaule to come to me presently.

Orle. I will : and esteeme my selfe more then happie, that you will imploy me. *Exit.*

Agrip. Watch him, watch him for Gods sake, if hee sigh not or looke not backe.

Cyp. He does both : but what misterie lyes in this ?

Agrip. Nay, no misterie, tis as plaine as Cupids forehead : why this is as it should be : And esteeme my selfe more then happie, that you will imploy me : my French prisoner is in loue ouer head and eares.

Cypr. Its wonder how he scapes drowning.

Gall. With whom thinke you ?

Agrip. With his keeper, for a good wager : Ah, how glad is he to obey ? And how proud am I to command in this Empire of affection ? Ouer him and such Spungy-liuerd youthes, (that lie foaking in loue) I triumph more with mine eye, then euer he did ouer a Souldier with his sword. Ist not a gallant victorie for me to subdue my Fathers enemy with a looke ? Prince of Cyprus, you were best take heede, how you encounter an English Lady.

Cypr. God bleffe me from louing any of you, if all bee so cruell.

Agryp. God bleffe me from suffering you to loue me, if you be not so formable.

Cyp. Wil you commaund me any seruice, as you haue done Orleans ?

Agrip. No other seruice but this, that (as Orleans) you loue me, for no other reason, but that I may torment you.

Cypr. I wil : conditionally, that in all companie I may call you my tormenter.

Agr. You shall : conditionally, that you neuer beg for mercy. Come, my Lord of Galloway.

Gall. Come, sweete Madam.

Exeunt.

Manet Cyprus.

Cypr. The Ruby-colour'd portals of her speech
Were closde by mercy : but vpon her eye,
(Attir'd in frownes) sat murthering crueltie.

Enter Agrip. and liflens.

Shees angrie, that I durst so high aspire.
O, shee disdaines that any straungers brest

Should be a Temple for her deitie :
 Shees full of beautie, full of bitternes.
 Till uow, I did not dally with loues fire :
 And when I thought to try his flames indeede,
 I burnt me euen to cinders : O, my starres,
 Why from my natiue shore did your beames guide me,
 To make me dote on her that doth deride me ?

She kneeles : he walkes musing.

Agri. Hold him in this mind, sweete Cupid, I con-
 iure thee. O, what musick these hey-hoes make ? I
 was about to cast my litle litle felse into a great loue
 trance for him, fearing his hart had been flint : but
 since I see tis pure virgin wax, he shal melt his belly
 full : for now I know how to temper him. *Exit.*

Cypr. Neuer beg mercy ? yet be *He spies her.*
 my tormenter.

I hope shee heard me not : doubtlesse shee did :
 And now will she insult vpon my passions,
 And vex my constant loue with mockeries.
 Nay, then ile be mine owne Physician,
 And out face loue, and make her thinke that I
 Mournd thus, because I saw her standing by.
 What newes, my Lord of Cornewall ?

Enter Cornewall.

Cornew. This faire Prince,
 One of your Countrie-men, is come to Court,
 A lustie gallant braue in Cyprus Ile,
 With fiftie bard Horfes prawning at his heeles,
 Backt by as many strong limbd Cypriots.
 All whom he keepes in pay : whose offred seruice,
 Our king with Armes of gladnes hath embrac'd.

Cypr. Borne in the Ile of Cyprus ? whats his
 name ?

Cornew. His seruants call him Fortunatus sonne.

Cypr. Rich Fortunatus sonne ? Is he ariu'd ?

*Enter Longaile, Galloway, and Chester
with Jewels.*

Longa. This he bestowed on me.

Chest. And this on me.

Gallow. And this his bounteous hand inforc'd mee
take.

Longa. I prize this Jewell at a hundred Markes,
Yet would he needes bestow this gift on me.

Cyp. My Lords, whose hand hath beene thus prodigal?

Gallow. Your countrieman my Lord, a Cypriot.

Longa. The gallant fure is all compact of gold,
To euery Lady hath he giuen rich Jewels,
And sent to euery seruant in the Court
Twentie faire English Angels.

Cypr. This is rare.

Enter Lincolne.

Lincol. My Lords, prepare your selues for re-
ueling,
Tis the kings pleasure that this day be spent
In royall pastimes, that this golden Lord,
(For so all that behold him, christen him)
May tast the pleasures of our English court.
Here comes the gallant, shining like the Sunne.

*Trumpets sound: Enter Athelstane, Andelocia, Agri-
pyne, Orleans, Ladies, and other attendants, In-
sultado a Spanish Lord: Musicke sounds within.*

Andel. For these your royall fauours done to me,
(Being a poore straunger) my best powres shall
proue,

By Actes of worth, the foundnes of my loue.

Athelst. Herein your loue shall best set out it selfe,
By staying with vs: if our English Ile
Hold any obiect welcome to your eyes,

Doe but make choice, and claime it as your prize.

The King and Cyprus conferre aside.

Ande. I thanke your grace : would he durst keepe
his word,

I know what I would claime : Tush, man, be bold,
Were shee a Saint, shee may be wonne with gold.

Cypr. Tis straunge I must confesse, but in this pride,
His Father Fortunatus (if he liue)
Consumes his life in Cyprus : still he spends,
And still his Coffers with abundance swell,
But how he gets these riches none can tell.

The King and Agripyne conferre aside.

Athelst. Hold him in talke : come hither, Agripyne.

Cypr. But what intic'de young Andelociaes foule
To wander hither ?

Andel. That which did allure,
My foueraignes sonne, the wonder of the place.

Agr. This curious heape of wonders, (which an
Empresse
Gaued him) he gaue me, and by Venus hand,
The warlike Amorato needes would sweare,
Hee left his countrie Cyprus for my loue.

Athelst. If by the foueraigne Magicke of thine eye,
Thou canst inchant his lookes to keepe the circles
Of thy faire cheekes, be bold to trie thy charmes,
Feede him with hopes, and find the royall veine,
That leades this Cypriot to his golden mine.
Here's Musicke spent in vaine, Lords, fall to dauncing.

Cypr. My faire tormentor, will you lend a hand ?

Agrip. Ile try this strangers cunning in a daunce.

Andel. My cunning is but small, yet whoo'le not
proue

To shame himsele for such a Ladies loue ?

Orle. These Cypriots are the diuels that torture me.
He courts her, and shee smiles, but I am borne,
To be her beauties slaue, and her loues scorne.

And. I shall neuer haue the face to aske the ques-
tion twice.

Agrip. Whats the reason ? Cowardlynnes or pride ?

Andel. Neither : but tis the fashon of vs Cypriots, both men and women, to yeeld at first assault, and we expect others should doe the like.

Agrip. Its a signe, that either your women are very black, & are glad to be sped, or your men very fond, & wil take no denial.

Andel. Indeede our Ladies are not so faire as you.

Agrip. But your men more ventrous at a breach then you, or els they are all daftardly fouldiers.

Andel. Hee that fightes vnder these sweete colours, & yet turnes coward, let him bee shot to death with the terrible arrowes of faire Ladies eyes.

Athelf. Nay Infultado, you must not denie vs. Infultad. *My Corocom es muy pesada, my Anima muy a-tormentada,*

No per los Cielos : La piede de Espagnoll, no haze musica in Tierra Inglesa.

Cypr. Sweete Infultado let vs see you daunce.

I haue heard the Spanish daunce is full of state.

Infultad. *Verdad Signor : la danza spagnola, es muy alta,*

Maestlica, y para Monarcas : vuestra Inglesa,

Baxa, Fantastica, y muy humilde.

Agrip. Doth my Spanish prisoner denie to daunce ? Hee has sworne to me by the crosse of his pure Toledo, to bee my seruant : by that oath (my Castilian prisoner) I coniure you to shew your cunning, though all your body bee not free, I am sure your heeles are at libertie.

Infultad. *Nolo quire contra dezir : vuestra oio haze conqwesto a su prisionero : Oyres, la paayne Hispanola, sea vuestra musica y grauidad, y maestlad : Paie, daaime Tabacca, Toma my capa, e my espada. Mas alta, Mas alta : Desuiaios, Desuiaios, Companieros, Mas alta, Mas alta.*

Hee daunces.

Athelf. Thankes, Infultado.

Cypr. Tis most excellent.

Agrip. The Spaniards daunce, is as his deedes bee, full of pride.

Athelst. The day growes old, & what remains
vnspent,

Shall be confum'd in banquets, Agripyne,
Leaue vs a while, if Andelocia please,
Goe beare our beautilous daughter companie.

And. Fortune I thanke thee : now thou smil'st on
me. *Exeunt Agrip. and Andel. and Ladies.*

Athel. This Cipriot beares a gallant princely mind.
My Lord, of what birth is your country-man ?
Thinke not, sweete Prince, that I propound this ques-
tion,

To wrong you in your loue to Agripyne :
Our fauours grace him to an other end.
Nor let the wings of your affection droope,
Because thee seemes to shun loues gentle lure.
Belieue it on our word, her beauties prize
Onely shall yeeld a conquest to your eyes.
But tell me whats this Fortunatus sonne ?

Cypr. Of honourable blood, and more renownd
In forreine kingdomes (whither his proud spirit,
Plum'd with ambitious fethers, caries him)
Then in his natie Countrie, but last day
The father and the sonnes were through their riots,
Poore and disdaine of all, but now they glister,
More bright than Midas : if some damned fiend
Fed not his bags, this golden pride would end.

Athelst. His pride weeke somewhat tame, & curb
the head

Of his rebellious prodigalitie :
He hath inuited vs, and all our Peeres,
To feast with him to morrow, his prouision,
I vnderstand may entertaine three kings.
But Lincolne, let our Subiects secretly
Be charge on paine of life that not a man
Sell any kind of Fewell to his seruants.

Cypr. This pollicy shall clip his golden wings,
And teach his pride what tis to striue with kings.

Athelst. Withdraw awhile : *Exeunt.*

Manet Athelstane.

Athelst. None fild his hands with Gold, for we fet spies,
 To watch who fed his prodigalitie ;
 He hung the Marble bosome of our Court,
 As thicke with gliftring Spangles of pure gold,
 As ere the spring hath stucke the earth with flowers.
 Unlesse he melt himselfe to liquid gold,
 Or be some God, some diuell, or can transport
 A mint about him, (by enchanted power)
 He cannot raine such showers : with his owne hands
 He threw more wealth abroad in euery streete,
 Then could be thrust into a Chariot :
 Hees a Magician sure, and to some fiend,
 His soule (by infernall couenants) has he sold,
 Alwaies to swimme vp to the chin in gold.
 Be what he can be, if those doting fires,
 Wherein he burnes for Agripinaes loue,
 Want power to melt from him this endlesse Myne,
 Then (like a slaue) weele chaine him in our Tower,
 Where tortures shall compell his sweating hands
 To cast rich heapes into our tresorie.

Scene 2

*Musicke sounding still: A curtaine being drawne,
 where Andelocia lies sleeping in Agripines lap,
 shee has his purse, and her selfe and another Lady
 tye another (like it) in the place, and then rise
 from him.*

Agrip. I haue found the sacred spring that neuer
 ebs.

Leaue vs : *Exit Lady.* But ile not shew't your
 maiestie,

Till you haue sworne by Englands royall crowne,
 To let me keepe it.

Athelst. By my Crowne I sweare,
 None but faire Agripyne the Jem shall weare.

Agrip. Then is this mine : see Father, here's the
 fire,

Whose gilded beames still burne, this is the Sunne,
 That euer shines, the tree that neuer dies,

Here growes the Garden of Hesperides,
The out-side mockes you, makes you thinke tis poore,
But entring it, you find eternall store.

Athelst. Art sure of this? How didst thou driue
it out?

Agrip. Feare not his waking yet, I made him
drinke

That soporiferous Juice which was composd,
To make the Queene (my Mother) rellish sleepe,
When her last sicknes fommond her to heauen.
He sleepes profoundly: when his amorous eyes
Had singde their wings in Cupids wanton flames,
I set him all on fire, and promist loue:
In pride whereof, he drew me forth this purse,
And swore, by this he multiplyed his gold.
I tride and found it true: and secretly
Commaunded Musicke with her siluer tongue,
To chime soft lullabies into his soule,
And whilst my fingers wantond with his hayre,
(T'intice the sleepe Juice to charme his eyes)
In all points was there made a purse, like his,
Which counterfet is hung in place of this.

Athelst. More then a second kingdome hast thou
won.

Leaue him, that when he wakes he may suspect,
Some els has robd him, come deere Agripyne,
If this strange purse his sacred vertues hold,
Weele circle England with a waft of Gold. *Exeunt.*

*Musicke still: Enter Shaddow very gallant, reading
a Bill, with emptie bags in his hand singing.*

Shad. These English occupiers are mad Troians:
let a man pay them neuer so much, theile giue him
nothing but the bag. Since my master created me
steward ouer his fiftie men, and his one and fiftie
horse, I haue rid ouer much businesse, yet neuer was
gald, I thanke the destinies: Musicke? O delicate
warble: O these Courtiers are most sweete triumphant

creatures. Seignior, Sir, Monsieur : fweete Seignior : this is the language of the accomplishment : O delicious strings : these heauenly wyre-drawers haue stretcht my master euen out at length : yet at length he must wake : master ?

Andel. Wake me not yet, my gentle Agripyne.

Shad. One word Sir, for the billets, and I vanish.

And. There's heauen in these times : throw the musicians

A bounteous largesse of three hundred Angels.

Andelocia starts up.

Shad. Why, sir, I haue but ten pound left.

And. Ha, Shaddow ! where's the Princeesse Agripyne ?

Shad. I am not Apollo, I cannot reueale.

Andel. Was not the princeesse here, when thou cam'st in ?

Shad. Here was no Princeesse but my princely selfe.

Andel. In faith ?

Shad. No in faith, Sir,

Andel. Where are you hid ? where stand you wantoning ? Not here ? gone ifaith ? haue you giuen me the slip ? well, tis but an amorous tricke and so I embrace it : my horse, Shaddow, how fare my horse ?

Shad. Upon the best Oates my vndersteward can buy.

An. I meane, are they lusty, sprightly, gallant, wanton, fiery ?

Shad. They are as all horses are, Caterpillers to the Commonwealth, they are euer munching : but Sir, for these billets, and these fagots and bauins ?

Andel. S'hart what billets, what fagots ? doe'st make mee a Woodmonger ?

Shad. No sweete Seignior, but you haue bid the King and his Peeres to dinner, and he has commaunded that no Woodmonger sell you a sticke of wood, and that no Collyer shall cofen you of your measure, but must tie vp the mouth of their Sackes, lea'st their Coales kindle your choler.

Andel. Ist possible ? ist true, or hast thou learnt of the English gallants to gull ?

Shad. Hees a gul that would be taught by such guls.

Andel. Not a flicke of wood ? Some child of enuie has buzd this stratagem into the kings eare, of purpose to disgrace me : I haue inuited his maiestie, and though it cost me a Million, ile feast him. Shadow, thou shalt hyre a hundred or two of Carts, with them post to all the Grocers in London, buy vp all the Cynamon, Cloues, Nutmegs, Licorish and all other spices, that haue any strong heart, and with them make fires to prepare our Cookerie :

Ere Fortunatus sonne looke red with shame,
Heele dresse a Kings feast in a spiced flame.

Shad. This diuice, Sir, will bee somewhat a kin to Lady Pride, twill aske cost.

And. Fetch twentie Porters, ile laid all with gold.

Shad. First, master, fil these bags.

And. Come then, hold vp, how now ? trickes, new crochets, Madam Fortune ? Drie as an Eele-skin ? Shaddow, take thou my Gold out.

Shad. Why Sir, here's none in.

Andel. Ha, let me see : O heres a bastard cheeke, I see now tis not mine ; tis counterfet,
Tis so : slaue thou hast robd thy master.

Sha. Not of a peny, I haue beene as true a steward.

And. Vengeance on thee and on thy stewardship.
Yet wherefore curse I thee ? thy leaden soule
Had neuer power to mount vp to the knowledge
Of the rich misterie closde in my purse. —
Oh no, ile curse myselfe, mine eyes ile curse,
They haue betrayd me, I will curse my tongue,
That hath betraid me : Ile curse Agripyne,
Shee hath betraid me. Sirens cease to sing,
Your charmes haue tane effect, for now I see,
All your inchantments were, to cosen me.

Musicke ceaseth.

Shad. What shall I doe with this ten pound, Sir ?

Andel. Goe buy with it a Chaine and hang thy
felfe.

Now thinke I on my Fathers prophecie.
Tell none (quoth he) the vertue, if you doe,
Much shame, much grieve, much danger follows you.
With teares I credit his diuinitie.
O fingers, were you vpriht Iustices,
You would teare out mine eyes : had not they gazde
On the fraile colour of a painted cheeke,
None had betraid me : henceforth ile defie
All beautie, and will call a louely eye,
A Sun whose scorching beames burne vp our ioyes,
Or turne them blacke like Ethiopians.
O women, wherefore are you borne mens woe,
Why are your faces fram'd Angelicall ?
Your hearts of sponges, soft and smooth in shew,
But toucht, with poyson they doe ouer-flow.
Had sacred wifedome beene my Fathers Fate,
He had died happie, I liu'd fortunate.
Shaddow, beare this to beautilous Agripyne,
With it this message, tell her, ile reprooue
Her couetous sinne the lesse, because for gold,
I see that most mens soules too cheape are sold.

Sha. Shal I buy these spices to day or to morrow ?

And. To morrow ! I, to morrow thou shalt buy
them.

To morrow tell the Princeffe I wil loue her,
To morrow tell the king, ile banquet him,
To morrow, Shaddow, will I giue thee gold,
To morrow pride goes bare and lust acold.
To morrow will the rich man feede the poore.
And vice to morrow vertue will adore,
To morrow beggers shall be crowned kings,
This No-time, morrowes-time, no sweetnes sings :
I pray thee hence : beare that to Agripyne.

Shad. Ile goe hence, because you fend me : but ile
goe weeping hence, for grieve that I must turne vil-
laine as many doe, and leaue you when you are vp
to the eares in aduersitie.

Exit.

Andel. Shee hath robd me, and now ile play the thiefe,

I steale from hence to Cyprus, for blacke shame
Here (through my riots) brands my loftie name.
Ile sell this pride for helpe to beare me thither,
So pride and beggerie shall walke together :
This world is but a Schoole of villanie,
Therefore ile rob my brother, (not of gold,
Nor of his vertues, vertue none will steale :)
But (if I can,) ile steale his wishing Hat.
And with that, wandring round about the world,
Ile search all corners to find miserie,
And where shee dwels, ile dwell, languish and die.

Exit.

Chorus. Gentels, if ere you haue beheld the paf-
sions,

The combats of his foule who being a king,
By some vsurping hand hath beene deposde
From all his royalties : euen such a foule,
Such eyes, such heart swolne big with sighes and teares,
The star-croft sonne of Fortunatus weares.
The thoughts crownd him a Monarch in the morne,
Yet now hees bandyed by the Seas in scorne,
From waue to waue : his golden treasures spoyle
Makes him in desperate language to intreate,
The winds to spend their furie on his life :
But they (being milde in tyrannie) or scorning
To triumph in a wretches funerall,
Tosse him to Cyprus. O what treacherie
Cannot this Serpent gold intice vs to ?
He robs his brother of the Souldans prize,
And hauing got his wif (the wishing Hat)
He does not (as he vould) seeke miserie,
But hopes by that to win his purse againe,
And in that Hope from Cyprus is he fled.
If your swift thoughts clap on their wonted wings,
In Genoway may you take this fugitiue,
Where hauing cozened many Jewellers,
To England backe he comes, step but to court,

And there (disguizde) you find him bargoning
 For Jewels with the beautilous Agripyne,
 Who wearing at her side the vertuous purse,
 He claspes her in his armes, and as a Rauen,
 Griping the tender-hearted Nightingale,
 So flies he with her (wishing) in the ayre,
 To be transported to some wildernesse :
 Imagine this the place : see here they come.

Enter Andelocia and Agripyne.

Since they themselues haue tongues, mine shall be
 dumbe.

Exit.

*Enter Andelocia with the wishing Hat on : Agripyne in
 his hand.*

Agrip. What diuell art thou that affrightst me thus,
 Haling a Princeesse from her fathers court,
 To spoyle her in this fauage wildernesse ?

Andel. Indeed the diuel and the pick-purse should
 alwaies flie together, (for they are sworne brothers :)
 but Madam Couetoufnes, I am neither a diuel as you
 cal me, nor a Jeweller as I call my selfe, no, nor a
 Jugler, yet ere you and I part, wee haue some leger-
 dimain together : do you know me ?

Agrip. I am betrayd : this is the Cypriot.
 Forgiue mee, twas not I that changde thy purse,
 But Athelstane my father, send me home,
 And heres thy purse againe : here are thy Jewels,
 And I in satiffaction of all wrongs.

Andel. Talke not you of satiffaction, this is some
 recompence that I haue you, tis not the purse I
 regard : put it off, and ile mince it as small as pie
 meate : the purse ? hang the purse : were that gon,
 I can make another, and another, and another,
 I and another : tis not the purse I care for, but
 the purser : you, I you. Ist not a shame that a
 kings daughter, a faire Lady, a Lady not for Lords,
 but for Monarches, should for gold sell her loue, and
 when shee has her owne asking, and that there stands

nothing betweene, then to cheate your sweete heart ?
O fie, fie, a shee cony-catcher ! You must be dealt
soundly with.

Agrip. Inioyne what paines thou wilt, and ile
endure them,
so thou wilt send me to my fathers court.

Ande. Nay gods lid, y' are not gon so : set your
heart at rest, for I haue set vp my rest, that except
you can runne swifter then a Hart, home you goe
not : what paines shall I lay vpon you ? Let me see :
I could serue you now but a slipperie touch : I could
get a young King or two, or three of you, and then
send you home, and bid their grand-fire king nurse
them : I could pepper you, but I will not.

Agrip. O, doe not violate my chastitie.

Ande. No, why I tell you I am not giuen to the
flesh, though I fauor (in your nose) a little of the
diuell, I could run away else, and starue you here.

Agrip. If I must die, doome me some easier
death.

Ande. Or transforme you (because you loue pick-
ing) into a Squirell, and make you picke out a poore
liuing here among the Nut trees : but I will not
neither.

Agrip. What will my gentle Andelocia doe ?

Ande. Oh, now you come to your old byas of
cogging.

Agrip. I pray thee Andelocia, let me goe :
Send me to England, and by heauen I sweare,
Thou from all kings on earth my loue shalt beare.

And. Shall I in faith ?

Agrip. In faith, in faith thou shalt.

Ande. Here, god a mercie : now thou shalt not
goe.

Agrip. Oh God.

Ande. Nay doe you heare Lady ? crie not y' are
best : no nor curse me not : if you thinke but a
crabbed thought of me, the spirit that caried you in
mine armes through the ayre, will tell me all : there-

fore fet your Sunday face vpont. Since you'le loue me, ile loue you, ile marrie you, and lie with you, and beget little Juglers : marie home you get not : England you'le fay is yours : but Agripyne, loue me, and I will make the whole world thine.

Agrip. I care not for the world, thou muredrest me, Betweene my sorrow, and the scalding Sunne I faint, and quickly will my life be done, My mouth is like a Furnace, and drie beate Drinks vp my bloud. Oh God, my heart will burst, I die, vnlesse some moysture quench my thirst.

Andel. S' hart now I am worfe then ere I was before :

For halfe the world I would not haue her die. Heres neither spring nor ditch, nor raine, nor dew, Nor bread nor drinke : my louely Agripyne, Be comforted, see here are Apple trees.

Agrip. Clime vp for Gods sake, reach me some of them.

Andel. Looke vp, which of these Apples likes thee best !

Agrip. This hath a withered face, tis some sweete fruit.

Not that, my sorrowes are too sowre already.

Andel. Come hither, here are Apples like gold.

Agrip. O, I for Gods sake, gather some of these.

Ay me, would God I were at home againe.

Andel. Stand farder, leaft I chance to fall on thee.

Climes vp.

Oh here be rare Apples, rare red-cheekt Apples, that cry come kisse me : Apples, hold your peace, ile teach you to cry.

Eates one.

Agrip. O England, shal I ne're behold thee more ?

Andel. Agripyna, tis a most Sugred delicious tast in ones mouth, but when tis downe, tis as bitter as gall.

Agrip. Yet gather some of them. Oh, that a Princeesse

Should pine for foode : were I at home againe, I should disdaine to stand thus and complaine.

And. Heres one Apple that growes highest,
Agripyna, and I could reach that, ile come downe.

Hee stands fishing with his girdle for it.

Agrip. Make haft, for the hot Sun doth scald my
cheekes.

Andel. The funne kisse thee? hold, catch, put on
my Hat, I will haue yonder highest Apple, though
I die for 't.

Agrip. I had not wont be Sun-burnt, wretched
mee.

O England, would I were againe in thee.

Exit. He leapes downe.

And. Swounds Agripyna, stay, O I am vndone,
Sweete Agripyna, if thou hearst my voice,
Take pittie of me, and returne againe.
Shee flies like lightning: O she heares me not,
I with myfelfe into a wildernesse,
And now I shall turne wilde: here I shall famish,
Here die, here cursing dye, here rauing die,
And thus will wound my brest, and rent mine hayre.
What hils of Flint are growne vpon my browes?
O me, two forked hornes, I am turn'd beast,
I haue abuzde two blessings, welth and knowledge,
Wealth in my purse, and knowledge in my Hat,
By which being borne into the Courts of kings,
I might haue seene the wondrous workes of Joue,
Acquirde Experience, Learning, Wisedome, Truth,
But I in wildernesse tottred out my youth,
And therefore must turne wild: must be a beast,
An vgly beast: my body hornes must beare,
Because my soule deformitie doth weare.
Liues none within this wood? If none but I
Liue here (thankes heauen) for here none els shal
die.

*He lies downe and sleepest under the tree: Enter
Fortune, Vice, Vertue, the Priest: Satyres with
Musicke, playing as they come in before Fortune.
They play awhile.*

Fortune. See where my new-turn'd diuel has built
his hel.

Vice. Vertue, who conquers now? the foole is
tane.

Vert. O sleepe sinne.

Vice. Sweete tunes wake him againe.

Musicke awhile, and then cease.

Fort. Vice sets too heauie on his drowzy soule,
Musicks sweete concord cannot pierce his eare.

Sing and amongst your Songs, mix bitter scorne.

Vert. Those that teare Vertue, must by Vice be
torne.

The Song.

1. *Verse.* Vertue stand aside : the foole is caught,
Laugh to see him, laugh alowd to wake him,
Follies nets are wide, and neatly wrought,
Mocke his hornes, and laugh to see Vice
take him.

Quire. Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, laugh, laugh in scorne,
Who's the foole ? the foole, he wears a horne.

Andel. wakens and stands vp.

2. *Verse.* Vertue stand aside, mock him, mock him,
mock him
Laugh alowd to see him, call him foole.
Error gaue him fucke, now forrowes rocke
him,
Send the riotous beaft to madnes schoole.

Quire. Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, laugh, laugh in scorne,
Who's the foole ? the foole, he weares a horne.

3. *Verse.* Vertue stand aside : your schoole he hates.
Laugh alowd to see him, mocke, mocke,
mock him.
Vanie and hell keepe open gates,
Hees in, and a newe nurse (Despaire) must
rocke him.

Quire. Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, laugh, laugh in scorne,
Foole, foole, foole, foole, foole, weare still the
horne.

*When they haue done singing, Vice and Vertue hold
Apples out to him, Vice laughing, Vertue grieuing.*

Andel. O me, what hell is this? fiends, tempt me
not.

Thou glorious diuell hence. O now I see,
This fruit is thine, thou hast deformed mee :
Idiot auoide, thy gifts I loath to tast.
Away : since I am entred madnes Schoole,
As good to be a beaſt, as be a foole.
Away, why tempt you me? ſome powrefull grace
Come and redeeme me from this hideous place.

Fort. To her hath Andelocia (all his life)
Sworne fealtie, woulſt thou forſake her now?

Andel. Whose bleſſed tongue names Andelocia?

Fort. Hers, who (attended on by deſtinies)
Shortned thy Fathers life, and lengthens thine.

Andel. O ſacred Queene of chance, now ſhorten
mine,

Elſe let thy deitie take off this ſhame.

Fort. Wooe her, t' was ſhee that ſet it on thy head.

Andel. She laughs to ſee me metamorphoſed. *Riſes.*

Vert. Wooe me, and ile take off this vgly ſcorne.

Vice. Wooe me, and ile clap on another horne,

Andel. I am beſet with anguiſh, ſhame and death.
O bid the Fates worke faſt, and ſtop my breath.

Fort. No Andelocia, thou muſt liue to ſee
Worfe torments (for thy follies) light on thee.
This golden tree, which did thine eyes intice,
Was planted here by Vice : loe, here ſtands Vice :
How often haſt thou ſued to win her grace?

Andel. Till now, I neuer did behold her face.

Fort. Thou diſt behold her at thy fathers death,
When thou in ſcorne diſt violate his will,
Thou diſt behold her, when thy ſtrecht-out arme
Catcht at the higheſt bough, the loſtieſt vice,

The fairest Apple, but the fowlest price.
 Thou didst behold her, when thy lickerish eye
 Fed on the beautie of faire Agripyne,
 Because th' adst gold, thou thoughtst al women thine.
 When look'st thou off from her ? for they whose soules
 Still reuell in the nights of vanitie,
 On the faire cheekes of Vice still fixe their eye.
 Because her face doth shine, and all her bofome
 Beares siluer Moones, thou wast enamord of her.
 But hadst thou vpward lookt, and seene these shames,
 Or viewd her round about, and in this glasse
 Seene Idiots faces, heads of diuels and hell,
 And read this ha, ha, he, this merrie storie,
 Thou wouldst haue loathd her : where, by louing her,
 Thou bearest this face, and wearst this vgly head,
 And if shee once can bring thee to this place,
 Lowd sounds these ha, ha, he, sheele laugh apace.

Andel. O, re-transforme me to a glorious shape,
 And I will learne how I may loue to hate her.

Fort. I cannot re-transforme thee, wooe this woman.

Andel. This woman ? wretched is my state, when I,
 To find out wisedome, to a foole must flie.

Fort. Foole, cleere thine eyes, this is bright Arete,
 This is poore Vertue, care not how the world
 Doth crowne her head, the world laughes her to scorne,
 Yet *Sibi fapit*, Vertue knowes her worth.
 Runne after her, sheele give thee these and these
 Crownes and Bay-garlands : (honours victories :)
 Serue her, and shee will fetch thee pay from heauen,
 Or giue thee some bright office in the starres.

Ande. Immortall Arete, Vertue diuine, *Kneedes.*
 O smile on me, and I will still be thine.

Vert. Smile thou on me, and I will still be thine :
 Though I am ielous of thy Apostasie,
 Ile entertaine thee : here, come tast this tree,
 Here's Physicke for thy sicke deformitie.

Andel. Tis bitter: this fruit I shall ne're digest.

Vert. Trie once againe, the bitternes soone dies.

Vice. Mines sweete, tast mine.

Vert. But being downe tis sowre,
And mine being downe has a delicious taste.
The path that leades to Vertues court is narrow,
Thornie and vp a hill, a bitter iorney,
But being gon through, you find all heau'nly sweetes,
The entrance is all flintie, but at th' end,
To towres of pearle and christall you ascend.

Ande. O delicate, O sweete Ambrosian rellish,
And see, my vglynesse drops from my browes,
Thankes beautilous Arete : O had I now
My Hat and purfe againe, how I would shine,
And gild my soule with none but thoughts diuine.

Fort. That shall be tride, take fruit from both
these trees,
By helpe of them, winne both thy purfe and Hat,
I will instruct thee how, for on my wings
To England shalt thou ride ; thy vertuous brother
Is (with that Shadow who attends on thee,)
In London, there ile set thee presently.
But if thou lose our fauours once againe,
To taste her sweetes, those sweetes must prooue thy
bane.

Vert. Vice, who shall now be crownd with victorie ?

Vice. Shee that triumphes at last, and that must I.

Exeunt.

*Enter Athelstane, Lincolne with Agripyne, Cyprus,
Galloway, Cornewall, Chester, Longauile and
Montrosse.*

Athelst. Lincolne, how set'st thou her at libertie ?

Lincol. No other prison held her but your court,
There (in her chamber) hath shee hid her selfe
These two daies, onely to shake off that feare,
Which her late violent rapture cast vpon her.

Cypr. Where hath the beautilous Agripyne been ?

Agryp. In heauen or hel, in or without the world,
I know not which, for as I oft haue seene
(When angrie Thamesis hath curld her lockes,)

A whirle-wind come, and from her frizeld browes,
 Snatch vp a handful of those sweatie pearles,
 That floode vpon her forehead, which awhile,
 Being by the boystrous wind hung in the ayre,
 At length hath flung them downe and raizd a storme.
 Euen with such furie was I wherryed vp,
 And by such force held prisoner in the cloudes,
 And throwne by such a tempest downe againe.

— *Cornu.* Some foule is dam'd in hell for this black
 deede.

Agrip. I haue the purse safe, and anon your grace
 Shall heare the wondrous historie at full.

Cypr. Tel me, tormenter, shall faire Agripyne,
 Without more difference be now christend mine?

Agrip. My choice must be my Fathers faire con-
 sent.

Athell. Then shall thy choyce end in this Cyprus
 prince.

Before the Sunne shall fixe times more arise,
 His royall marriage will we solemnise.
 Proclaime this honord match, come Agripyne,
 I am glad th' art here, more glad the purse is mine.

*As they are all going in: Enter Andelocia and Shad-
 dowe, like Irish Coster-mongers, Agripyna, Longa-
 uyle, and Montrosse stay listening to them, the rest
 Excunt.*

Both. Buy any Apples, feene Apples of Tamasco,
 feene Tamasco peepins: peeps feene, buy Tamasco
 peepins.

Agrip. Damasco apples? good my Lord Mont-
 rosse,
 Call yonder fellowes.

Montr. Sirra Coster-monger.

Shad. Who cals: peeps of Tamasco, feene peeps:
 I fat tis de sweetest apple in de world, tis better den
 de Pome water, or apple John.

Andel. By my trat Madam, tis reet Tamasco
 peepins, looke here els.

Shad. I dare not say, as de Irishman my countrie-
man say, tast de goodnesse of de fruit: No fayt tis
faire teere mistris, by Saint Patrickes hand tis teere
Tamasco apple.

Agrip. The fairest fruit that euer I beheld,
Tamasco apples, wherefore are they good?

Longa. What is your price of halfe a score of these?

Both. Halfe a score, halfe a score? dat is doos
many mester.

Longa. I, I, ten, half a score, thats fwe and
fwe.

Andel. Feeue and feeue? By my trat and as
Creeze faue me la, I cannot tell, wat be de price of
feeue and feeue, but tis tree crowne for one Peepin,
dat is de preez if you take em.

Shad. I fat, tis no leffe for Tamasco.

Agrip. Three crownes for one? what wondrous
vertues haue they?

Shad. O, tis feene Tamasco apple, and shall make
you a great teale wife, and make you no foole, and
make feene memorie.

Andel. And make dis fash be more faire and
amiable, and make dis eyes looke alwaies louely, and
make all de court & countrie burne in desire to kisse
di none sweete countenance.

Montr. Apples to make a Lady beautifull?
Madam thats excellent.

Agrip. These Irishmen,
Some say, are great dissemblers, and I feare,
These two the badge of their owne countrie weare.

Andel. By my trat, and by Saint Patrickes hand,
and as Creez faue me la, tis no dissembler: de Irish
man now and den cut di countrie-mans throate, but
yet in fayt hee loue di countrie-man, tis no dissembler:
dis feene Tamasco apple can make di sweete coun-
tenance, but I can take no leffe but three crownes for
one, I weare out my naked legs and my footes, and
my tods, and run hidder and didder to Tamasco for
dem.

Shad. As Creez faue me la, hee speakes true :
Peeps feene.

Agrip. Ile trie what power lies in Damasco fruit.
Here are ten crownes for three. So fare you well.

Montr. Lord Longaule, buy some.

Longa. I buy ? not I :

Hang them, they are toyes, come Madam, let vs
goe.

Excunt.

Both. Saint Patricke and Saint Peter, and all de
holy Angels look vpon dat fash and make it faire.

Enter Montrosse softly.

Shad. Ha, ha, ha, shees sped, I warrant.

Andel. Peace, Shaddow, buy any peepins, buy.

Both. Peeps feene, feene Tamasco apples.

Montr. Came not Lord Longaule to buy some
fruit ?

Andel. No fat, master, here came no Lords nor
Ladies, but di none sweete selfe.

Montr. Tis well, say nothing, heres six crownes for
two :

You say the vertues are to make one strong.

Both. Yes fat and make sweet countenance &
strong too.

Montr. Tis excellent, here : farwell, if these proue,
Ile conquer men by strength, women by loue. *Exit.*

Enter Longaule.

Both. Ha, ha, ha, why this is rare.

Shad. Peace, master, here comes another foole.

Both. Peepes feene, buy any peepes of Tamasco ?

Longa. Did not the Lord Montrosse returne to
you ?

Both. No fat, sweete master, no Lord did turne to
vs : Peepes feene.

Longa. I am glad of it : here are nine crownes for
three :

What are the vertues besides making faire ?

Andel. O, twill make thee wondrous wife.

Shad. And dow shall bee no more a foole, but
sweete face and wife.

Longa. Tis rare, farwell, I neuer yet durst wooe.
None loues me : now ile trie what these can doe.

Exit.

Andel. Ha, ha, ha, So, this is admirable, Shaddow,
here end my torments in Saint Patrickes Purgatorie,
but thine shall continue longer.

Shad. Did I not clap on a good false Irish face ?

Andel. It became thee rarely.

Shad. Yet thats lamentable, that a false face
should become any man.

Andel. Thou art a gull, tis all the fashion now,
which fashion because wee keepe, step thou abroad,
let not the world want fooles : whilst thou art commen-
sing thy knauerie there, ile proceede Doctor Dodipoll
here : that done, thou Shaddow and I will fat our selues
to behold the transformation of these fooles : goe flie.

Shad. I feare nothing, but that whilst wee strue
to make others fooles, we shall weare the Coxcombes
our selues, Pips fine &c. *Exit Shaddow.*

Enter Ampedo.

Andel. S'hart, here's my brother whome I haue
abuzde :

His presence makes me blush, it strikes me dead,
To thinke how I am metamorphosed.
Feene peepins of Tamasco &c.

Amp. For shame cast off this Maske.

Andel. Wilt thou buy any pips ?

Amp. Mocke me no longer
With idle apparitions : many a land
Haue I with wearie feete and a sicke soule
Measurd to find thee ; and when thou art found,
My greatest griefe is, that thou art not lost :
Yet lost thou art, thy fame, thy welth are lost,
Thy wits are lost, and thou hast in their stead,
With shame and cares, and misery crownd thy head.
That Shaddow that pursues thee, fild mine eares

With sad relation of thy wretchednesse,
Where is the purse, and where my wishing Hat ?

Andel. Where ? and where ? are you created Constable, you stand so much vpon Interrogatories ! the purse is gone, let that fret you, and the Hat is gone, let that mad you : I runne thus through all trades to ouer-take them, if youle bee quiet, follow me, and helpe, if not, flie from me, and hang your selfe : wilt thou buy any pippins ? *Exit.*

Amp. O, how I grieue, to see him thus transformd !
Yet from the circles of my iealous eyes,
He shall not start, till he haue re-possess
Those vertuous Jewels, which found once againe,
More cause they ne're shall giue me to complaine,
Their worth shall be consum'd in murdring flames,
And end my grieue, his ryot, and our shames. *Exit.*

3 *Enter Athelstane, Agripyne, Montrosse and Longaule
with hornes, Lincolne and Cornwall.*

Athelst. In spite of forcerie trie once againe,
Trie once more in contempt of all dam'd spels.

Agrip. Your maiestie fights with no mortall power.
Shame and not conquest, hangs vpon his strife.
O, touch me not, you adde but paine to paine,
The more you cut, the more they grow againe.

Lincol. Is there no art to coniure downe this
scorne ?

I ne're knew Phisicke yet against the horne.

Enter Cyprus.

Athelst. See, prince of Cyprus, thy faire Agripyne
Hath turnd her beautie to deformitie.

Cypr. Then I defie thee, Loue, vaine hopes, adew,
You haue mockt me long ; in scorne ile now mocke
you.

I came to see how the Lord Longaule
Was turnd into a monster, and I find
An obiect, which both strikes me dumbe and blind.
To morrow should haue beene our marriage morne,

But now my bride is shame, thy bridegrome scorne.
O tell mee yet, is there no Art, no charmes,
No desperate Phyficke for this desperate wound?

Athlft. Al meanes are tride, but no meanes can
be found.

Cypr. Then England, farwell : haplesse maide, thy
stars,
Through spitefull influence set our hearts at warres.
I am infor't to leaue thee, and refigne
My loue to grieve.

Enter Orleans and Galloway.

Agrip. All grieve to Agripyne.

Cypr. Adew, I would say more, had I a tongue
Able to helpe his master : mightie king,
I humbly take my leaue, to Cyprus I,
My fathers Sonne, must all such shame defie. *Exit.*

Orle. So doth not Orleans, I defie all those,
That loue not Agripyne, and him defie,
That dares but loue her halfe so well as I.
O pardon me, I haue in sorrowes Jayle,
Beene long tormented, long this mangled bosome
Hath bled, and neuer durst expose her wounds,
Till now, till now, when at thy beautilous feete,
I offer loue and life, O cast an eye
Of mercy on me, this deformed face
Cannot affright my soule from louing thee.

Agri. Talk not of loue, good Orleans, but of hate.

Orle. What sentence will my loue pronounce on
me?

Gall. Will Orleans then be mad? O gentle friend.

Orle. O gentle, gentle friend, I am not mad :
Hees mad, whose eyes on painted cheekes doe doate,
O Galloway, such read beauties booke by roate.
Hees mad, that pines for want of a gay flowre,
Which fades when grief doth blast, or sicknes lowre,
Which heate doth wither, and white ages frost
Nips dead : such fairenes, when tis found, tis lost.
I am not mad, for louing Agripyne,

My loue lookes on her eyes, with eyes diuine,
 I doate on the rich brightnes of her mind,
 That sacred beautie strikes all other blind,
 O make me happie then, since my desires
 Are fet a burning by loues purest fires.

Athelst. So thou wilt beare her far from England
 fight
 Inioy thy wishes.

Agrip. Locke me in some caue,
 Where staring wonders eye shall not be guiltie
 To my abhorred lookes, and I will die
 To thee, as ful of loue as miserie.

Athelst. I am amazde and mad, some speckled
 soule

Lies pawnd for this in Hell, without redemption,
 Some fiend deludes vs all.

Cornw. O vniust Fates,
 Why doe you hide from vs this misterie ?

Lincol. My Lord Montrosse, how long haue your
 browes worne
 This fashon ? these two feather-springs of horne ?

Montr. An Irish kerne sold me Damasco apples,
 Some two howres since, and (like a credulous foole)
 Hee swearing to me that they had this power,
 To make me strong in body rich in mind,
 I did beleeeue his words, tasted his fruit,
 And since haue been attirde in this disguise.

Longa. I feare that villaine hath beguild me too.

Cornw. Nay before God he has not cozend you,
 You haue it foundly.

Longa. Me he made beleeeue,
 One apple of Damasco would inspire
 My thoughts with wisedome, and vpon my cheekes
 Would cast such beautie, that each Ladies eye,
 Which lookt on me, should love me presently.

Agrip. Desire to looke more faire, makes me more
 fowle,

Thofe apples did intice my wandring eye,
 To be enamord of deformitie.

Athelst. This prooues that true, which oft I haue
heard in schooles,
Those that would seeme most wise, doe turne most
fooles.

Lincol. Here's your best hope, none needes to
hide his face,
For horned foreheads swarme in euery place.

Enter Chester bringing Andelocia like a French Doctor.

Athelst. Now Chester, what Phytitions hast thou
found?

Chest. Many, my leige, but none that haue true skill
To tame such wilde diseases: yet here's one,
A Doctor and a Frenchman, whome report
Of Agripynes grieve hath drawne to court.

Athelst. Cure her, and Englands treasorie shall
stand,

As free for thee to vse, as rayne from heauen.

Montr. Cure me, and to thy Coffers I will send,
More gold from Scotland then thy life can spend.

Logna. Cure Longauile, and all his wealth is thine.

Andel. He Monsieur Long-villaine gra tanck you:
Gra tanck your mashestie a great teale artely by my
trat: where be dis Madam Princeza dat be so musht
tormenta? O Jeshu: one, 2: an tree, 4 & 5,
seez horne: Ha, ha, ha, pardona moy prea wid al
mine art, for by my trat, me can no point shofe but
laugh, Ha, ha, ha, to marke how like tree bul-beg-
gera, dey stand. Oh, by my trat and fat, di diuela
be whoreson, scuruie, paltry, ill fauore knaue to mocke
de Madam, and gentill-home so: Ha, ha, ha, ha.

Lincol. This Doctor comes to mocke your maiestie.

Andel. No by my trat la, but me loua mushta
mushta merymant: Come Madam, prea-artely stand
still, and letta mee feele you: dis horne, O tis prettie
horne, dis be facile, easie for pull de vey, but Madame
dis O be grand, grand horne, difficill, and very
deepe, tis perilous, a grand Laroone. But Madam,
prea be patient, we shall take it off vell.

Athe. Thrice haue we parde them off, but with
fresh paine,

In compasse of a thought they rise againe.

Andel. Its true, tis no easie matta, to pull horne
off, tis easie for pull on, but hard for pull off, some
horne bee so good fellow, hee will still inhabit in de
mans pate, but tis all one for tat, I shall snap away all
dis: Madam trust dis downe into your little belly.

Agrip. Father, I am in feare to taste his physicke.
First let him worke experiments on those.

Andel. Ile sawce you for your infidelitie. *Aside.*
In no place can I spie my wishing Hat.

Longa. Thou learned Frenchman, trie thy skill on me,
More vgly then I am, I cannot be.

Montr. Cure me, and Montrosse welth shall all be
thine.

Andel. Tis all one for dat: shall doe presently,
Madam prea marke me: Monsieur, shamp dis in your
two shaps, so, now Monsieur Long-villaine, dis so:
nowe dis, feare noting, tis eshelent medicyne: so,
now cram dis into your guts, and belly: So, now
snap away dis whorefon fowre diuela; Ha, ha, Is no
point good?

Puts Gallowayes hornes off.

Athelst. This is most strange.
Wast painefull Longauyle?

Longa. Eafe tooke them off, and there remaines no
paine.

Agrip. O trie thy sacred Physicke on me.

Andel. No by my trat, tis no possibla, tis no possi-
bla, al de matta, all de ting, all de substance, all de
medicyne, be among his and his belly: tis no possibla,
till me prepare more.

Athelst. Prepare it then, and thou shalt haue more
gold

From Englands Coffers, then thy life can wast.

Andel. I must buy many costily tings dat grow in
Arabia, in Asia, and America, by my trat tis no possi-
bla, till anoder time, no point.

Agrip. There's nothing in the world, but may for
gold
Be bought in England, hold your lap ile rayne
A shower of Angels.

Andel. Fie, fie, fie, fie, you no credit le dockature ?
Ha, but vel, tis all one for tat : tis no mattera for
gold : Vel, vel, vel, vel, vel, me haue some more, prea
fay noting, shall bee presently prepara for your
hornes.

Shee has my purse, and yonder lies my Hat,
Worke braines, and once more make me fortunat.
Vel, vel, vel, vel, be patient Madam, presently, pre-
sently, be patient, mee haue two, tree, fowre and fwe
medicines for de horne : presently Madam, stand you
der, prea wid all mine art, stand you all der : and fay
noting, so : nor looke noting dis vey : so, presently,
presently Madam, snip dis horne off wid de rushes &
anoder ting by and by, by and by, by and by, prea
looke none dis vey, and fay noting. *Gds his Hat up.*

Athelf. Let no man speake, or looke, vpon his
life.

Doctör, none here shall rob thee of thy skill.

Andel. So, taka dis hand : winck now prea artely
wid your two nyes : why so.

Would I were with my brother Ampedo.

Exit with her.

Agrip. Helpe, Father, helpe, I am hurried hence
perforce.

Athelf. Draw weapons, wheres the princeffe, fol-
low him,

Stay the French Doctör, stay the Doctör there.

Cornwall and some other run out, and enter presently.

Cornw. Stay him, sh'art who dare stay him ? tis the
diuell

In likenesse of a Frenchman, of a Doctör.

Looke how a rascall Kyte having swept vp

A Chicken in his clawes, so flies this hell-hound

In th' ayre with Agripyne in his armes.

Orle. Mount euery man vpon his swiftest horse.

Flie feuerrall waies, he cannot beare her farre.

Gall. These paths wee beate.

Exeunt Gall. and Orleans.

Lincol. And this way shall be mine.

Cornw. This way, my Leige, ile ride.

Athelst. And this way I :

No matter which way, to seeke miserie. *Exit Athelst.*

Loga. I can ride no way, to out-runne my shame.

Montr. Yes, Longauile, lets gallop after too,
Doubtlesse this Doctör was that Irish diuell,
That cozend vs, the medicine which he gaue vs,
Tafted like his Damasco villanie.

To horfe, to horfe, if we can catch this fiend,
Our forked shame shall in his heart bloud end.

Longa. O how this mads me, that all tongues in
scorne,

Which way so ere I ryde, cry, Ware the horne.

Exeunt.

Enter Andelocia, with Agripyne, Ampedo and Shaddow.

Agrip. O gentle Andelocia pittie me,
Take off this infamie, or take my life.

Andel. Your life? you thinke then that I am a
true Doctör indeede, that tie vp my liuing in the
knots of winding sheetes: your life? no, keepe your
life, but deliuer your purfe: you know the theifes salu-
tation, Stand & deliuer. So, this is mine, and these
yours: Ile teach you to liue by the sweate of other
mens browes.

Shad. And to striue to be fairer then God made
her.

Andel. Right, Shaddow: therefore vanish, you
haue made me turne Iugler, and crie hey-passe, but your
horne shall not repasse.

Agrip. O gentle Andelocia.

And. Andelocia is a Nettle: if you touch him
gently, heele sting you.

Shad. Or a rose, if you pul his sweete stalke heele
prick you.

Andel. Therefore not a word, goe, trudge to your Father : figh not for your purfe, money may be got by you, as well as by the little Welſhwoman in Cyprus, that had but one horne in her head, you have two ; and perhaps you ſhall caſt both : as you uſe me, marke thoſe words well, as you uſe me, nay, y'are beſt flie, ile not endure one word more. Yet ſtay too, becauſe you intreate me ſo gently, and that ile make ſome amends to your Father, although I care not for any King in Chriſtendome, yet hold you, take this Apple, eate it as you goe to court, and your hornes ſhall play the cowards and fall from you,

Agrip. O gentle Andelocia.

Andel. Nay away, not a word.

Shad. Ha, ha, ha, &c. Ware hornes.

Exit Agrip. weeping.

Andel. Why doeſt thou laugh, Shaddow ?

Shad. To ſee what a horne plague followes coueteouſneſſe and pride.

Amp. Brother, what miſteries lie in all this ?

Andel. Trickes, Ampedo, trickes, deuifes, and mad Heroglyphickes, mirth, mirth, and melody. O, there's more muſicke in this, then all the Gammoth ares, and Sol fa Res, in the world ; here's the purſe, and here's the Hat : becauſe you ſhal be ſure ile not ſtart, weare you this you know his vertue ; if danger beſet you, flie & away : A ſort of broken-ſhind limping legd Jades runne hobling to ſeeke vs : Shaddow, weelee for all this haue one fit of mirth more, to make vs laugh and be fat.

Shad. And when we are fat, maſter, weelee doe as all gluttons doe, laugh and lie downe.

Andel. Hiet hee to my chamber, make ready my richeſt attire, ile to Court preſently.

Shad. Ile goe to Court in this attire, for apparell is but the ſhaddow of a man, but ſhaddow is the ſubſtance of his apparell.

Exit Shaddow.

Andel. Away, away, and meete me preſently.

Amp. I had more neede to crie, away to thee.

Away, away with this wilde lunacie,
Away with ryots.

Andel. Away with your puritie, brother, y'are an Affe, why doth this purse spit out gold but to be spent? why liues a man in this world, to dwell in the Suburbs of it, as you doe? Away forren simplicitie, away: are not eyes made to see faire Ladies? hearts to loue them? tongues to court them, & hands to feele them? Out your Stocke, you stone, you logs end: Are not legs made to daunce, and shall mine limp vp and downe the world after your cloth-stockin-heeles? you haue the Hat, keepe it, anon ile visit your vertuous countenance againe, adew, pleafure is my sweete mistress, I weare her loue in my Hat, and her soule in my heart: I haue sworne to bee merry, and in spite of Fortune and the blacke-browd destinies, ile neuer be fad. *Exit.*

Amped. Goe, foole, in spite of mirth, thou shalt be fad.

Ile burie halfe thy pleasures in a graue
Of hungrie flames, this fire I did ordaine
To burne both purse and Hat: as this doth perish,
So shall the other: count what good and bad
They both haue wrought, the good is to the ill,
As a small Pible to a mightie hill.
Thy glorie and thy mischiefes here shall burne,
Good gifts abuzde to mans confusion turne.

Enter Longauile, and Montrosse with Souldiers.

Longa. This is his brother: Souldiers, bind his armes.

Montr. Bind armes and legs, and hale the fiend away.

Amp. Vnciuill: wherefore must I taste your spite?

Longa. Art thou not one of Fortunatus sonnes?

Amped. I am, but he did neuer doe you wrong.

Longa. The diuell thy brother has, villaine, looke here.

Montr. Where is the beautious purfe and wifhing Hat?

Amped. My brother Andelocia has the purfe,
This way heele come anon to paffe to court,
Alas, that finne should make mens hearts fo bold,
To kill their foules for the bafe thirst of gold.
The wifhing Hat is burnt.

Montr. Burnt! Souldiers bind him.
Tortures shall wring both hat and purfe from you,
Villaine, ile be reueng'd for that bafe scorne,
Thy hell-hound brother clapt vpon my head.

Longa. And fo will Longaule.
Away with him.

Montr. Drag him to yonder towre, there shackle him,
And in a paire of Stockes, locke vp his heeles,
And bid your wifhing Cap deliuer you.
Giue vs the purfe and Hat, wee le fet thee free,
Els rot to death and starue.

Amp. Oh tyranny, you need not scorne the badge
which you did beare :
Beasts would you be, though hornes you did not weare.

Montr. Drag hence the cur: come noble Long-
aule,
One's sure, and were the other fiend as fast,
Their pride should cost their liues: their purfe and
Hat
Shall be both ours, wee le share them equally.

Longa. That will be some amends for arming me.

Enter Andelocia and Shaddow after him.

Montr. Peace, Longaule, yonder the gallant comes.

Longa. Y'are well encountred.

Andel. Thankes, Lord Longaule.

Longa. The king expects your prefence at the court.

Andel. And thither am I going.

Shad. Pips fine, fine apples of Tamasco, ha, ha, ha.

Montr. Wert thou that Irishman that cozend vs ?

Shad. Pips fine, ha, ha, ha, no not I : not Shaddow.

Andel. Were not your Apples delicate and rare ?

Longa. The worst that ere you sold ; Sirs, bind him fast.

Andel. What, wil you murder me ? helpe, help, some helpe.

Shad. Helpe, helpe, helpe. *Exit Shaddow.*

Montr. Follow that Dog, and stop his balling throate.

Andel. Villaines, what meanes this barbarous trechery ?

Longa. We meane to be reueng'd for our disgrace.

Montr. And stop the golden current of thy waft.

Andel. Murder, they murder me, O call for helpe.

Long. Thy voice is spent in vaine, come, come, this purse,

This wel-spring of your prodigalitie.

Andel. Are you appointed by the king to this ?

Montr. No, no, rise, spurne him vp : know you who's this ?

Andel. My brother Ampedo ? Alas, what fate Hath made thy vertues so infortunate ?

Amp. They ryot and the wrong of these two Lords,

Who (causelesse) thus do starue me in this prifon.

Longa. Striue not y'are best, villaines, lift in his legs.

Andel. Traitors to honor, what doe you intend ?

Longa. That ryot shall in wretchednesse haue end.

Question thy brother with what cost hees fed,

And so assure thou shalt be banquetted.

Exeunt they two.

Amp. In want, in miserie, in woe and care,

Poore Ampedo his fill hath surfeted :

My want is famine, bolts my miserie,

My care and woe should be thy portion.

Andel. Giue me that portion, for I haue a heart

Shall spend it freely, and make bankrowt
The proudest woe that euer wet mans eye.
Care with a mischief? wherefore should I care?
Haue I rid side by side by mightie kings,
Yet be thus bridled now? Ile teare these fetters.
Murder, crie murder, Ampedo, alowd.
To beare this scorne our Fortunes are too proud.

Amp. O folly, thou hast powre to make flesh
glad,

When the rich foule in wretchednesse is clad.

Ande. Peace, foole, am not I Fortunes minion?
These bands are but one wrinkle of her frowne,
This is her Euening maske, her next mornes eye
Shall ouer-shine the Sunne in maiestie.

Amp. But this sad night will make an end of me.
Brother, farwell, grieve, famine, sorrow, want,
Haue made an end of wretched Ampedo.

Ande. Where is the wishing Hat?

Amp. Consum'd in fire.

Ande. Accur'd be those hands that did destroy it,
That would redeeme vs, did we now enioy it.

Amp. Wanton, farwel, I faint, deaths frozen hand
Congeales lifes little Riuer in my brest.

No man before his end is truly blest. *Dyes.*

Ande. O miserable, miserable foule.

Thus a foule life makes death to looke more foule.

Enter Longauyle and Montrosse with a halter.

Longa. Thus shall this golden purse diuided be,
One day for you, another day for me.

Montr. Of daies anon, say, what determine you,
Shall they haue libertie, or shall they die?

Long. Die sure: and see, I thinke the elder's dead.

And. I, murderers, he is dead, O sacred wisdom,
Had Fortunatus beene enamored
Of thy celestiall beautie, his two sonnes
Had shind like two bright Sunnes.

Longa. Pul hard, Montrosse.

Andel. Come you to strangle me? are you the hangman?

Hell-hounds y' are dam'd for this impietie.

Fortune, forgiue me, I deferue thy hate,

My selfe haue made myselfe a reprobate :

Vertue, forgiue me, for I haue transgrest

Against thy lawes, my vowes are quite forgot,

And therefore shame is false to my finnes lot.

Riches and knowledge are two gifts diuine.

They that abuse them both as I haue done,

To shame, to beggerie, to hell must runne.

O conscience hold thy sting, cease to afflict me.

Be quicke, tormentors, I desire to die.

No death is equall to my miserie.

Cyprus, vaine world, and Vanitie farwell.

Who builds his heauen on earth, is sure of hell.

Lon. He's dead : in some deepe vault lets throw their bodies.

Montr. First let us see the purse, Lord Longaule.

Longa. Here tis, by this weele fill this towre with gold.

Montr. Frenchman, this purse is counterfeit.

Longa. Thou lyest.

Scot, thou hast cozend me, giue me the right,

Els shall thy bosome be my weapons graue.

Montr. Villaine, thou shalt not rob me of my due.

They fight : Enter Athelstane, Agripyna, Orleans, Galloway, Cornewall, Chester, Lincoln, and Shaddow with weapons at one dore : Fortune, Vice, and their attendants at another dore.

All. Lay hands vpon the murderers, strike them downe.

Fortune. Surrender vp this purse for this is mine.

All. Are these two diuels, or some powers diuine?

Shad. O fee, fee, O my two masters, poore Shaddowes substances ; what shall I doe ? whose body shall Shaddow now follow ?

Fort. Peace, Ideot, thou shalt find rich heapes of
fooles,

That will be proud to entertaine a Shaddow.
I charme thy babbling lips from troubling me.
You need not hold them, see, I smite them downe
Lower then hell : base soules, sincke to your heauen.

Vice. I doe arrest you both my prisoners.

Fort. Stand not amazde, you gods of earth, at this,
Shee that arresteth these two fooles is Vice,
They haue broke Vertues laws, Vice is her serieant,
Her Jayler and her executioner.
Looke on those Cypriots, Fortunatus sonnes,
They and their Father were my minions,
My name is Fortune.

All. O dread deitie.

Fort. Kneele not to me : if Fortune list to frowne,
You need not fal downe, for sheele spurne you downe,
Arise, but fooles, on you ile triumph thus.
What haue you gaind by being couetous ?
This prodigall purse did Fortunes bounteous hand
Bestow on them, their ryots made them poore,
And set these markes of miserable death,
On all their pride, the famine of base gold
Hath made your soules to murders hands be sold,
Onely to be cald rich. But Ideots see
The vertues to be fled, Fortune hath cauld it so,
Those that will all deuowre, must all forgoe.

Athelst. Most sacred Goddesse.

Fortune. Peace, you flatterer.

Thy tongue but heapes more vengeance on thy head.
Fortune is angrie with thee, in thee burnes
A greedie couetous fire, in Agripyne
Pride like a Monarch reuels, and those sinnes
Haue lead you blind-fold to your former shames,
But Vertue pardond you, and so doth Fortune.

Athelst. and Agrip. All thanks to both your sacred
deities.

Fort. As for these Mettall-eaters, these base thieues,
Who rather then they would be counted poore,

Will dig through hell for gold, you were forgiuen
 By Vertues generall pardon ; her broade seale
 Gaue you your liues, when shee tooke off your hornes.
 Yet hauing scarce one foote out of the Jayle,
 You tempt damnation by more desperate meanes,
 You both are mortall, and your paines shall ring
 Through both your eares, to terrifie your soules,
 As please the Judgement of this mortall king.

Athelst. Faire Empreffe of the world, since you
 religne

Your power to me, this sentence shall be mine,
 Thou shalt be torturd on a wheele to death,
 Thou with wild hordes shalt be quartered.

Vice. Ha, ha, weake Judge, weake iudgement, I
 reuerse

That sentence, for they are my prisoners,
 Embalme the bodies of those Cypriots,
 And honour them with princely buriall,
 For those doe as you please, but for these two,
 I kisse you both, I loue you, y' are my minions.
 Untie their bands, Vice doth repriue you both,
 I set you free.

Both. Thankes, gracious deitie.

Vice. Be gon, but you in libertie shall find
 More bondage then in chaines, fooles, get you
 hence,

Both wander with tormented conscience.

Longa. O horrid Judgement, thats the hell in-
 deede.

Mon. Come, come, our death ne're ends if con-
 science bleede.

Both. O miserable, miserable men. *Exeunt.*

Fortune. Fortune triumphes at this, yet to appeare,
 All like my selfe, that which from those I tooke,
 King Athelstane I will bestow on thee,
 And in it the old vertue I infuse :
 But, king, take heede how thou my gifts doest vse.
 England shall ne're be poore, if England striue,
 Rather by vertue, then by wealth to thriue.

Enter Vertue, crown'd : Nymphes and kings attending on her, crown'd with Olive branches and lawrels, musicke sounding.

Vice. Vertue ? alas good foule, shee hides her head.

Vert. What enuious tongue said, Vertue hides her head ?

Vice. Shee that will driue thee into banishment.

Fort. Shee that hath conquerd thee : how dar'st thou come,

Thus trickt in gawdy Feathers, and thus garded,
Which crowned kings and Muses, when thy foe
Hath trod thus on thee, and now triumphes so ?
Where 's vertuous Ampedo ? See, hees her slaue,
For following thee this recompence they haue.

Vert. Is Ampedo her slaue ? why thats my glorie.
The Idiots cap I once wore on my head,
Did figure him, those that (like him) doe muffle
Vertue in clouds, and care not how shee shine,
He make their glorie like to his decline :
He made no vse of me, but like a miser,
Lockt up his wealth in rustie barres of sloth :
His face was beautifull, but wore a maske,
And in the worlds eyes seemd a Blackamore.
So perish they that so keepe vertue poore.

Vice. Thou art a foole to strue, I am more strong,
And greater then thy selfe, then Vertue flie,
And hide thy face, yeeld me the victorie.

Vert. Is Vice higher then Vertue ? thats my glorie,
The higher that thou art, thou art more horrid,
The world will loue me for my comlynesse.

Fortu. Thine owne selfe loues thy selfe : why on the heads
Of Agripyne, Montrose and Longaule,
(English, Scot, French) did Vice clap vgly hornes,
But to approue that English, French and Scot,
And all the world els, kneele and honour Vice,

But in no Countreie, Vertue is of price ?

Vert. Yes, in all Countries Vertue is of price,
In euery kingdome some diuiner brest
Is more enamord of me then the rest.
Haue English, Scot, and French bowd knees to
thee ?

Why that's my glorie too, for by their shame,
Men will abhor thee and adore my name.
Fortune, thou art too weake, Vice th' art a foole,
To fight with me, I suffred you awhile,
T' ecclips my brightnes, but I now will shine,
And make you sweare your beautie's bafe to mine.

Fort. Thou art too insolent, see here 's a court
Of mortall Judges, lets by them be tride,
Which of vs three shall most be deifide.

Vice. I am content.

Fort. And I.

Vert. So am not I.

My Judge shall be your sacred deitie.

Vice. O miserable me, I am vndon.

Exit Vice and her traine.

All. O stop the horrid monfter.

Vert. Let her runne.

Fortune, who conquers now ?

Fort. Vertue, I see,

Thou wilt triumph both ouer her and me.

All. Empresse of heauen and earth.

Fort. Why doe you mocke me ?

Kneele not to me, to her transfer your eyes,
There sits the Queene of Chance, I bend my knees,
Lower then yours : dread goddesse, tis most meete,
That Fortune fall downe at thy conqu'ring feete.
Thou sacred Empresse that commandst the Fates,
Forgiue what I haue to thy handmaid don,
And at thy Chariot wheelles Fortune shall run,
And be thy captiue and to thee resign
All powers which heau'ns large Patent haue made
mine.

Vert. Fortune th'art vanquisht : sacred deitie,
O now pronounce who winnes the victorie,
And yet that sentence needes not, since alone,
Your vertuous prefence Vice hath ouer-throwne,
Yet to confirme the conquest on your side,
Looke but on Fortunatus and his sonnes
Of all the welth those gallants did possesse,
Onely poore Shaddow is left comfortlesse,
Their glorye's faded and their golden pride.

Sha. Onely poore Shaddow tels how poore they
died.

Vert. All that they had, or mortall men can haue,
Sends onely but a Shaddow from the graue.
Vertue alone liues still, and liues in you,
I am a counterfeits, you are the true,
I am a Shaddow, at your feete I fall,
Begging for these, and these, my selfe and all.
All these that thus doe kneele before your eyes,
Are shaddowes like my selfe, dred Nymph it lyes
In you to make vs substances. O doe it,
Vertue I am sure you loue, thee woes you to it.
I read a verdict in your Sun-like eyes,
And this it is : Vertue the victorie.

All. All loudly cry, Vertue the victorie.

Vert. Vertue the victorie : for ioy of this,
Those selfe same himnes which you to Fortune sung
Let them be now in Vertues honour rung.

The Song.

Vertue smiles : crie hollyday,
Dimples on her cheekes doe dwell,
Vertue frownes, crie wellada,
Her loue is Heauen, her hate is Hell.
Since heau'n and hell obey her power,
Tremble when her eyes doe lowre.

174 *The Comedie of Olde Fortunatus.*

Since heau'n and hell her power obey,
Where thee smiles, crie hollyday.
Hollyday with ioy we crie,
And bend, and bend, and merily,
Sing hymnes to vertues deitie :
Sing hymnes to Vertues deitie.

As they all offer to goe in. Enter the two old men.



THE EPILOGUE AT COURT.

1. **N** Ay flay, poore pilgrims, when I entred first
The circle of this bright celestiall Sphære,
I wept for ioy, now I could weepe for feare.

2. I feare we all like mortall men shall proue
Weake (not in loue) but in exprefsing loue.

1. Let euery one beg once more on his knee,
One pardon for himfelfe, and one for mee,
For I intic'd you hither : O deere Goddeffe,
Breathe life in our nombd spirits with one smile,
And from this cold earth, we with liuely foules
Shal rife like men (new-borne) and make heau'n found
With Hymnes fung to thy name, and praiers that we
May once a yeere fo oft enioy this fight,
Til these yong boyes change their curld locks to white,
And when gray-winged Age fits on their heads,
That fo their children may fupply their Steads,
And that heau'ns great Arithmetician,
(Who in the Scales of Nomber weyes the world)
May ftill to fortie two, and one yeere more,
And ftill adde one to one, that went before,
And multiply fowre tennes by many a ten :
To this I crie Amen.

All. Amen, amen.

1. Good night (deere miftris) thofe that wifh thee
harne,
Thus let them floope vnder deftructions arme.

All. Amen, Amen, Amen. *Excunt.*

FINIS.

Tho. Dekker.





Satiro-mastix.

OR

*The vntrussing of the Humo-
rous Poet.*

As it hath bin presented publickely,
by the Right Honorable, the Lord Cham-
berlaine his Seruants ; and priuately, by the
Children of Paules.

By Thomas Dekker.

Non recito cuiquam nisi Amicis idq ; coactus.



LONDON,

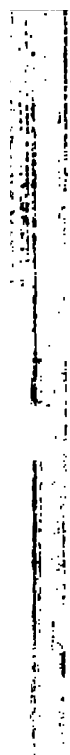
Printed for *Edward VVhite*, and are to bee
solde at his shop, neere the little North doore of Paules
Church, at the signe of the Gun. 1602.

Dramatis personæ.

1. William Rufus.
2. Sir Walter Terill.
3. Sir Rees ap Vaughan.
4. S. Quintilian Shorthose.
5. Sir Adam Prickshaft.
6. Blunt.
7. Crispinus.
8. Demetrius Fannius.
9. Tucca.
10. Horace.
11. Asinius Bubo.
12. Peter Flash.
13. Cælestine.
14. Mistris Miniuer.
15. Ladies.

Ad Detractorem.

*Non potes in Nugas dicere plura meas,
Fpse ego quam dixi.— Qui se mirantur, in illos
Virus habe : Nos hæc nouimus efse nihil.*





To the World.

WOrld, I was once resolu'd to bee round
with thee, because I know tis thy fashion
to bee round with euery bodie: but the
winde shifing his point, the Veine
turn'd: yet because thou wilt sit as Judge of all
matters (though for thy labour thou wear'st Mi-
dasses eares, and art Monstrum horrendum, in-
forme: Ingens cui lumen ademptum; whose
great Poliphemian eye is put out) I care not
much if I make description (before thy Vniuersa-
lity) of that terrible Poetomachia, lately commenc'd
betweene Horace the second, and a band of leane-
witted Poetafters. They haue bin at high wordes,
and so high, that the ground could not serue them,
but (for want of Chopins) haue stalk't vpon Stages.

Horace hal'd his Poetafters to the Barre, the
Poetafters vntruss'd Horace: how worthily
eyther, or how wrongfully, (World) leaue it to
the Furie: Horace (questionles) made himselfe
belecue, that his Burgonian wit might desperately
challenge all commers, and that none durst take vp
the foyles against him: It's likely, if he had not so
beleiu'd, he had not bin so deceiu'd, for hee was
answer'd at his owne weapon: And if before
Apollo himselfe (who is Coronator Poetarum) an

Inquisition should be taken touching this lamentable merry murdering of Innocent Poetry: all mount Helicon to Bun-hill, it would be found on the Poetasters side *Se defendendo*. Notwithstanding the Doctors think otherwise. I meete one, and he runnes full Butt at me with his Satires hornes, for that in vntrussing Horace I did onely whip his fortunes, and condition of life, where the more noble Reprehension had bin of his mindes Deformitie, whose greatnes if his Criticall Lynx had with as narrow eyes, obseru'd in himselfe, as it did little spots vpon others, without all disputation: Horace would not haue left Horace out of Euery man in's Hvmour. His fortunes? why does not he taxe that onely in others? Read his Arraignement and see. A second Cat-a-mountaine mewes, and calles me Barren, because my braines could bring forth no other Stigmaticke than Tucca, whome Horace had put to making, and begot to my hand: but I wonder what language Tucca would haue spoke, if honest Capten Hannam had bin borne without a tongue? Ist not as lawfull then for mee to imitate Horace, as Horace Hannam? Besides, If I had made an opposition of any other new-minted fellow, (of what Test so euer) hee had bin out-fac'd, and out-weyed by a settled former approbation: neyther was it much improper to set the same dog vpon Horace, whom Horace had set to worrie others.

I could heere (euen with the feather of my pen) wipe off other ridiculous imputations: but my best way to answer them, is to laugh at them: onely thus much I protest (and sweare by the diuineſt part of true Poetrie) that (howsoeuer the limmes of my naked lines may bee and I know haue bin, tortur'd on the racke) they are free from conspiring

the least disgrace to any man, but onely to our new Horace; neyther should this ghost of Tucca, haue walkt vp and downe Poules Church-yard, but that hee was rais'd vp (in print) by newe Exorcismes. World, if thy Hugenes will belciue this: doe, if not, I care not: for I dedicate my booke not to thy Greatnes, but to the Greatnes of thy scorne: Defying which, let that mad Dog Detraction bite till his teeth bee worne to the stumps: Enuy feede thy Snakes so fat with poyson till they burst: World, let all thy Adders shoote out their Hydra-headed-forked Stinges, Ha, ha, Nauci; if none will take my part, (as I desire none) yet I'thanke thee (thou true Venusian Horace) for these good wordes thou giu'st me: Populus me sibylat at mihi plaudo. World farewell.

Malim Conuiuiis quàm placuisse Cocis.







The Vntrussing of the Humorous Poet.

Enter two Gentlewomen strewing of flowers.

1. **C**OME bedfellow come, strew apace, strew,
strew : in good troth tis pitty that these
flowers must be trodden vnder feete as they are like
to bee anon.

2. Pity, alacke pretty heart, thou art sorry to see
any good thing fall to the ground : pitty ! no more
pitty, then to see an Innocent Mayden-head deliuered
vp to the ruffling of her new-wedded husband.
Beauty is made for vse, and hee that will not vse a
sweete soule well, when she is vnder his fingers, I pray
Venus he may neuer kisse a fair and a delicate, soft,
red, plump-lip.

1. Amen, and that's torment enough.

2. Pity ! come foole, fling them about lustily ; flowers
neuer dye a sweeter death, than when they are
smoothen'd to death in a Louers bosome, or else pause
the high wayes, ouer which these pretty, simpring,
setting things, call'd brides, must trippe.

1. I pray thee tell mee, why doe they vse at wed-
dings to furnish all places thus, with sweete hearbes
and flowers ?

2. One reason is, because tis — ô a most sweet
thing to lye with a man.

1. I think tis a O more more more more sweet to
lye with a woman.

2. I warrant all men are of thy minde : another reason is, because they sticke like the scutchions of madame chastity, on the fable ground, weeping in their stalkes, and wincking with theyr yellow-funke eyes, as loathe to beholde the lamentable fall of a Maydenhead : what senceless thing in all the house, that is not nowe as melancholy, as a new fet-vp Schoolemaster ?

1. Troth I am.

2. Troth I thinke thou mournst, because th'ast mist thy turne, I doe by the quiuer of *Cupid* : you see the torches melt themselues away in teares : the instruments weare theyr heart stringes out for sorrow : and the Siluer Ewers weepe most pittifull Rosewater : fue or fixe payre of the white innocent wedding gloues, did in my sight choose rather to be torne in peeces than to be drawne on ; and looke this Rosemary, (a fatall hearbe) this dead-mans nose-gay, has crept in amongst these flowers to decke th' inuisible coarfe of the Bride's Maydenhead, when (oh how much do we poore wenches suffer) about eleuen or twelue, or one a clock at midnight at furthest, it descends to purgatory, to giue notice that *Calestine* (hey ho) will neuer come to lead Apes in hell.

1. I fee by thy sighing thou wilt not.

2. If I had as many Mayden-heads, as I have hayres on my head, Ide venture them all rather then to come into so hot a place ; prethy strew thou, for my little armes are weary.

1. I am sure thy little tongue is not.

2. No faith that's like a woman bitten with fleas, it neuer lyes stil : fye vpont, what a miserable thing tis to be a noble Bride, there's such delayes in rising, in fitting gownes, in tying, in pinning Rebatoes, in poaking, in dinner, in supper, in Reuels, & last of all in cursing the poore nodding fidlers, for keeping Mistris Bride so long vp from sweeter Reuels ; that, oh I could neuer endure to put it vp without much bickering.

1. Come th'art an odde wench, hark, harke, musicke ? nay then the Bride's vp.

2. Is she vp ? nay then I see she has been downe : Lord ha mercy on vs, we women fall and fall still, and when we haue husbands we play upon them like Virginall Jackes, they must ryse and fall to our humours, or else they'l neuer get any good straines of musicke out of vs ; but come now, haue at it for a mayden-head.

strew.

As they strew, enter Sir Quintilian Shorthofe with Peeter Flash and two or three seruingsmen, with lights.

Sir quin. Come knaues, night begins to be like my felfe, an olde man ; day playes the theefe and steales vpon 'vs ; O well done wenches, well done, well done, you haue couered all the stony way to church with flowers, tis well, tis well, ther's an Embleame too, to be made out of these flowers and stones, but you are honest wenches, in, in, in.

2. When we come to your yeares, we shal learne what honesty is, come pew-fellow. *Exeunt.*

Sir quin. Is the musicke come yet ? so much to do ! Ist come ?

Omnes. Come, sir.

Sir quin. Haue the merry knaues pul'd their fiddle cases ouer their instruments eares ?

Flash. As soone as they entred our gates, the noyse went, before they came nere the great Hall, the faint hearted villiacoes sounded at least thrice.

Sir quin. Thou shouldst haue reuiu'd them with a Cup of burnt wine and sugar ; sirra, you, horse-keeper, goe, bid them curry theyr strings : Is my daughter vp yet ?

Flash. Vp sir ? she was seene vp an houre agoe.

Sir quin. Shee's an early sturrer, ah sirra.

Flash. Shee'l be a late sturrer soone at night sir.

Sir Quint. Goe too *Peeter Flash*, you haue a good

fodaine flash of braine, your wittes husky, and no maruaile, for tis like one of our Comedians bearded, still ith stubble : about your busines and looke you be nymble to flye from the wine, or the nymble wine will catch you by the nose.

Flash. If youre wine play with my nose Sir, Ile knocke's coxcombe.

Sir quin Doe *Peeter*, and weare it for thy labour ;
Is my Sonne in Law Sir *Walter Terrell* ready yet ?

Omnes. Ready Sir. *Exit another.*

Sir Quin. One of you attend him : Stay *Flash*, where's the note of the guesstes you haue inuited ?

Flash. Here Sir, Ile pull all your guesstes out of my bosome ; the men that will come, I haue crost, but all the Gentlewomen haue at the tayle of the last letter a pricke, because you may read them the better.

Sir Quin. My spectacles, lyght, lyght, knaues : Sir *Adam Pricke/shaft*, thou hast crost him, heele come.

Flash. I had much a doe sir, to draw Sir *Adam Pricke/shaft* home, because I tolde him twas early, but heele come.

Sir quint. Justice *Crop*, what will he come ?

Flash. He took phisicke yesterday sir.

Sir quint. Oh then *Crop* cannot come.

Flash. O Lord yes, sir yes, twas but to make more roome in his *Crop* for your good cheare, *Crop* will come.

Sir quint. Widdow *Mineuer*.

Flash. Shee's prickt you see sir, and will come.

Sir quint. Sir *Vaughan ap Rees*, oh hee's crost twife, so, so, so, then all these Ladyes, that fall downewardes heere, will come I see, and all these Gentlemen that stand right before them.

Flash. All wil come.

Sir quint. Well sayd, heere, wryte them out agen, and put the men from the women ; and *Peeter*, when we are at Church bring wine and cakes, be light & nimble good *Flash*, for your burden will be but light.

Enter sir Adam a light before him.

Sir Adam Pricke shaft. God morrow, god morrow :
goe, in, in, in, to the Bridegroom, taste a cup of
burnt wine this morning, twill make you flye the better
all the day after,

Sir Adam. You are au early styrrer *Sir Quintilian Shorthose.*

Sir qui. I am so, it behoues me at my daughters
wedding, in, in, in ; fellow put out thy torch, and put
thy selfe into my buttery, the torch burnes ill in thy
hand, the wine will burne better in thy belly, in, in.

Flash. Ware there, roome for *Sir Adam Pricke shaft* : your Worship— *Exit.*

Enter Sir Vaughan and Mistris Mineuer.

Sir quin. *Sir Vaughan* and Widdow *Mineuer*, wel-
come, welcome, a thousand times : my lips *Mistris*
Widdow shall bid you God morrow, in, in, one to the
Bridegroom, the other to the Bride.

Sir Vaughan. Why then *Sir quintilian Shorthose*, I
will step into mistris Bride, and Widdow *Mineuer*,
shall goe vpon M. Bridegroom.

Mineu. No pardon, for by my truely *Sir Vaughan*,
Ile ha no dealings with any M. Bridegrooms.

Sir quin. In widdow in, in honest knight in.

Sir Vaug. I will vther you mistris widdow.

Flash. Light there for *Sir Vaughan* ; your good
Worship—

Sir Vaug. Drinke that shilling Ma. *Peeter Flash*,
in your guttes and belly.

Fla. Ile not drinke it downe sir, but Ile turne it
into that which shall run downe, oh merrily !

Exit Sir Vaughan.

*Enter Blunt, Crispinus, Demetrius, and others with
Ladies, lights before them.*

Sir quin. God morrow to these beauties, and Gen-

tlemen, that haue Vhered this troope of Ladyes to my daughters wedding, welcome, welcome all ; musick ? nay then the bridegroomes comming, where are these knaues heere ?

Flash. All here sir.

Enter Terill, Sir Adam, Sir Vaughan, Celestine, Mineuer, and other Ladies and attendants with lights.

Teri. Good morrow Ladies and fayre troopes of gallants, that haue depof'd the drowzy King of sleep, to Crowne our traine with your rich prefences, I salute you all ;

Each one share thanks from thanks in generall.

Crif. God morrow M. Bride-groome, mistris Bride.

Omnes. God morrow M. Bride-groome.

Ter. Gallants I shal intreate you to prepare, For Maskes and Reuels to defeate the night, Our Soueraigne will in person grace our marriage.

Sir quin. What will the king be heer ?

Ter. Father he will.

Sir quin. Where be these knaues ? More Rosemary and gloues, gloues, gloues : choose Gentlemen ; Ladyes put on soft skins vpon the skin of softer hands ; so, so : come mistris Bride take you your place, the olde men first, and then the Batchelors ; Maydes with the Bride, Widdows and wiues together, the priest's at Church, tis time that we march thether.

Ter. Deare *Blunt* at our returne from Church, take paines to step to *Horace*, for our nuptiall songs ; now Father when you please.

Sir quin. Agreed, fet on, come good Sir *Vaughan*, must we lead the way ?

Sir Vau. *Peter* you goe too fast for Mistris pride : so, gingerly, gingerly ; I muse why Sir *Adam Pricke-shaft* sticks so short behinde ?

Sir quin. He follows clofe, not too fast, holde vp knaues,

Thus we lead youth to church, they vs to graues

Exeunt.

Horace sitting in a study behind a Curtaine, a candle by him burning, books lying confusally: to himselfe.

Hor. To thee whose fore-head swels with Roses,
Whose most haunted bower
Giues life & sent to euery flower,
Whose most adored name incloses,
Things abstruse, deep and diuine,
Whose yellow tresses shine,
Bright as *Eoan* fire.
O me thy Priest inspire.
For I to thee and thine immortall name,
In—in—in golden tunes,
For I to thee and thine immortall name—
In—sacred raptures flowing, flowing, swimming, swim-
ming :
In sacred raptures swimming,
Immortal name, game, dame, tame, lame, lame, lame,
Pux, hath, shame, proclaime, oh—
In sacred raptures flowing, will proclaime, not—
O me thy Priest inspyre !
For I to thee and thine immortall name,
In flowing numbers fild with spright and flame,
Good, good, in flowing numbers fild with spright &
flame.

Enter Asinius Bubo.

Asini. *Horace, Horace,* my sweet ningle, is alwayes
in labour when I come, the nine Muses be his mid-
wiues I pray *Jupiter* : Ningle.

Ho. In flowing numbers fild with spright and
flame,
To thee.

Asini. To me? I pledge thee sweet Ningle, by
Bacchus quaffing boule, I thought th' adst drunke to
me.

Hor. It must haue been in the deuine lycour of *Pernassus*, then in which, I know you would scarce haue pledg'd me, but come sweet roague, fit, fit, fit.

Asini. Ouer head and eares yfaith? I haue a sacke-full of newes for thee, thou shalt plague some of them, if God send vs life and health together.

Hor. Its no matter, empty thy sacke anon, but come here first honest roague, come.

Asini. Ist good, Ist good, pure *Helicon* ha?

Hor. Dam me ist be not the best that euer came from me, if I have any iudgement, looke fir, tis an *Epi-thalamium* for Sir *Walter Terrds* wedding, my braines haue giuen assault to it but this morning.

Asin. Then I hope to see them flye out like gun powder ere night.

Hor. Nay good roague marke, for they are the best lynes that euer I drew.

Asin. Heer's the best leafe in England, but on, on, Ile but tune this Pipe.

Hor. Marke, to thee whose fore-head swels with *Roses*.

Asin. O sweet, but will there be no exceptions taken, becaufe fore-head and swelling comes together?

Hor. Pusch away, away, its proper, besides tis an elegancy to say the fore head swels.

Asin. Nay an't be proper, let it stand for Gods loue.

Hor. Whose most haunted bower,
Giues life and sent to euery flower,
Whose most adored name incloses,
Things abstruse, deep and diuine.
Whose yellow tresses shine,
Bright as *Eoan* fire.

Asini. O pure, rich, ther's heate in this, on, on.

Hor. Bright as *Eoan* fire,
O me thy Priest inspire!
For I to thee and thine immortall name . . . marke
this.

In flowing numbers fild with fpyte and flame.

Asini. I mary, ther's spryte and flame in this.

Hor. A pox, a this Tobacco.

Afin. Wod this case were my last, if I did not marke, nay all's one, I haue always a confort of Pypes about mee, myne Ingle is all fire and water ; I markt, by this Candle (which is none of Gods Angels) I remember, you started backe at sprite and flame.

Hor. For I to thee and thine immortall name,
In flowing numbers fild with sprite and flame,
To the Loues mightiest King,

Himen & *Himen*, does our chafe muse sing.

Afin. Ther's musicke in this ;

Hor. Marke now deare *Afinius*.
Let these virgins quickly see thee,
Leading out the Bride,
Though theyr blushing cheekes they hide,
Yet with kisses will they see thee,
To vntye theyr Virgin zone,
They grieue to lye alone.

Afini. So doe I by *Venus*.

Hor. Yet with kisses wil they see thee, my Muse has marcht (deare roague) no farder yet : but how ist ? how ist ? nay prethee good *Afinius* deale plainly, doe not flatter me, come, how ?—

Afin. If I haue any iudgement :

Hor. Nay look you Sir, and then follow a troope of other rich and labour'd concepts, oh the end shall be admirable ! but how ist sweet *Bubo*, how, how ?

Afin. If I have any Iudgement, tis the best stufte that euer dropt from thee.

Hor. You ha seene my Acrosticks ?

Afi. Ile put vp my pypes and then Ile see any thing.

Hor. Th'ast a Coppy of mine Odes to, hast not *Bubo* ?

Afi. Your odes ? O that which you spoke by word a mouth at th' ordinary, when Musco the gull cryed Mew at it :

Hor. A pox on him poore braineles Rooke : and you remember, I tolde him his wit lay at pawne with

his new Sattin sute, and both would be lost, for not fetching home by a day.

Asi. At which he would faine ha blusht but that his painted cheekes would not let him.

Hor. Nay sirra the Palinode, which I meane to stitch to my Reuels, shall be the best and ingenious piece that euer I fwet for ; stay roague, Ile fat thy spleane and make it plumpe with laughter.

Asi. Shall I ? tayth Ningle, shall I see thy secrets ?

Hor. Puh my friends.

Asi. But what fardle's that ? what fardle's that ?

Hor. Fardle, away, tis my packet ; heere lyes intomb'd the loues of Knights and Earles, heere tis, heere tis, heere tis, Sir Walter Terils letter to me, and my answere to him : I no sooner opened his letter, but there appeared to me three glorious Angels, whome I ador'd, as subiectes doe their Soueraignes : the honest knight Angles for my acquaintance, with such golden baites—but why doost laugh my good roague ? how is my answere, prethee, how, how ?

Asi. Answere, as God iudge me Ningle, for thy wit thou mayst answer any Iustice of peace in England I warrant ; thou writ'st in a most goodly big hand too, I like that, I readst as leageably as some that haue bin fau'd by their neck-verse.

Hor. But how dost like the Knights inditing ?

Asi. If I haue any iudgement ; a pox ont, heer's worshipfull lynes indeed, heer's stufte : but sirra Ningle, of what fashion is this knights wit, of what blocke ?

Hor. Why you see ; wel, wel, an ordinary Ingenuity, a good wit for a knight, you know how, before God I am haunted with some the most pittiful dry gallants.

Asini. Troth so I think ; good peeces of lantskip, shew best a far off.

Hor. I, I, I, excellent sumpter horses, carry good cloaths ; but honest roague, come, what news, what newes abroad ? I haue heard a the horses walking a' the top of Paules.

Asi. Ha ye! why the Captain Tucce rayles vpon you most preposterously behinde your backe, did you not heare him?

Ho. A pox vpon him: by the white & soft hand of *Minerua*, Ile make him the most ridiculous: dam me if I bring not's humor ath stage: &—scuruy lympling tongu'd captaine, poore greasie buffe Ierkin, hang him: tis out of his Element to traduce me: I am too well ranckt *Asinius* to bee stab'd with his dudgeon wit: firra, Ile compose an Epigram vpon him, shall goe thus—

Asi. Nay I ha more news, ther's Crispinus & his Iorneyman Poet Demetrius Faninus too, they sweare they'll bring your life & death vpon'th stage like a Bricklayer in a play.

Hor. Bubo they must presse more valiant wits than theyr own to do it: me ath stage! ha, ha. Ile starue theire poore copper-lace work masters, that dare play me: I can bring (& that they quake at) a prepar'd troope of gallants, who for my sake shal distaste euery vnalted line, in their fly-blowne Comedies.

Asi. Nay that's certaine, ile bring 100 gallants of my ranke.

Hor. That same Crispinus is the silliest Dor, and Faninus the lightest cob-web-lawne peece of a Poet, oh God!

Why should I care what euery Dor doth buz
In credulous eares, it is a crowne to me,
That the best iudgements can report me wrong'd.

Asi. I am one of them that can report it:

Hor. I thinke but what they are, and am not moou'd.

The one a light voluptuous Reueler,
The other, a strange arrogating puffed,
Both impudent, and arrogant enough.

Asi. S'lid do not Criticus Reuel in these lynes,
ha Ningle ha?

Knocking.

Hor. Yes, they're mine owne.

Crisp. Horrace.

Dem. Flaccus.

Crisp. Horrace, not vp yet ;

Hor. Peace, tread softly, hyde my Papers ; who's
tis so early !

Some of my rookes, some of my guls !

Crisp. Horrace, Flaccus.

Hor. Who's there ! stray, treade softly : *Wat
Tread* on my Efe : who's there ? my gowne sweete
ronge, so, come vp, come in.

Enter Crispinus and Demetrius.

Crisp. God morrow Horrace.

Hor. O, God saue you gallants.

Crisp. *Astinus* Bubo well met.

Ast. Nay, I hope so Crispinus, yet I was sicke a
quarter of a yeare a goe of a vehement great tooth-
atch : a pox out, it bit me vilye, as God sa me la I
knew twas you by your knocking so soone as I saw
you : Demetrius Fannius, wil you take a whiffe this
morning ? I haue tickling geare now, heer's that will
play with your nose, and a pype of mine owne scowr-
ing too.

Dem. I, and a Hodghead too of your owne, but
that will neuer be scowred cleane I feare.

Ast. I burnt my pype yesternight, and twas neuer
vide since, if you will tis at your seruice gallants, and
Tobacco too, tis right pudding I can tell you ; a Lady
or two, tooke a pype full or two at my hands, and
praizd it for the Heauens, shall I fill Flannius !

Dem. I thanke you good Astinius for your loue,
I sildome take that Phisicke, tis enough
Hauing so much foole to take him in snuffe.

Hor. Good Bubo read some booke, and giue vs
leau. . . .

Ast. Leau haue you deare Ningle, marry for read-
ing any book Ile take my death vpont (as my Ningle
sayes) tis out of my Element : no faith, ever since I felt
one hit me ith teeth that the greatest Clarkes are not

the wisest men, could I abide to goe to Schoole, I was at *As in presenti* and left there : yet because Ile not be counted a worse foole then I am, Ile turne ouer a new leafe.

Asinius reads and takes Tobacco.

Hor. To see my fate, that when I dip my pen
In distilde Roses, and doe struie to dreine,
Out of myne Inke all gall ; that when I wey
Each fillable I write or speake, because
Mine enemies with sharpe and searhing eyes
Looke through & through me, caruing my poore
labours

Like an Anotomy : Oh heauens to see,
That when my lines are measur'd out as straight
As even Paralels, tis strange that still,
Still some imagine they are drawne awry.
The error is not mine, but in theyr eye,
That cannot take proportions.

Crif. Horrace, Horrace,
To stand within the shot of galling tongues,
Proues not your guilt, for could we write on paper,
Made of these turning leaues of heauen, the cloudes,
Or speake with Angels tongues : yet wise men know,
That some would shake the head, tho Saints should
sing,
Some snakes must hisse, because they 're borne with
stings.

Hor. Tis true.

Crif. Doe we not see fooles laugh at heauen ?
and mocke
The Makers workmanship ; be not you grieu'd
If that which you molde faire, vpriht and smooth,
Be skrwed awry, made crooked, lame and vile,
By racking coments, and calumnious tongues,
So to be bit it rankles not : for innocence
May with a feather brush off the foulest wrongs.
But when your dastard wit will strike at men
In corners, and in riddles folde the vices
Of your best friends, you must not take to heart,

If they take off all gilding from their pilles,
And onely offer you the bitter Coare.

Hor. Crispinus.

Cri. Say that you haue not sworne vnto your
Paper,
To blot her white cheekes with the dregs and bottome
Of your friends priuate vices : say you sweare
Your loue and your allegiance to bright vertue
Makes you descend so low, as to put on
The Office of an Executioner,
Onely to strike off the swolne head of sinne,
Where ere you finde it standing,
Say you sweare ;
And make damnation parcell of your oath,
That when your lashing iestes make all men bleed,
Yet you whip none. Court Citty, country, friends,
Foes, all must smart alike ; yet Court, nor Citty,
Nor foe, nor friend, dare winch at you ; great pitty.

Dem. If you sweare, dam me Faninus, or Crispinus,
Or to the law (*Our kingdomes golden chaine*)
To Poets dam me, or to Players dam me,
If I brand you, or you, tax you, scourge you :
I wonder then, that of fve hundred, foure
Should all point with their fingers in one instant
At one and the same man ?

Hor. Deare Faninus.

Dem. Come, you cannot excuse it.

Hor. Heare me, I can—

Dem. You must daube on thicke collours then to
hide it.

Cri. We come like your Phisitions, to purge
Your sicke and daungerous minde of her disease.

Dem. In troth we doe, out of our loues we come,
And not reuenge, but if you strike vs still,
We must defend our reputations :
Our pens shall like our swords be alwayes sheath'd,
Vnlesse too much prouockt, Horace if then
They draw bloud of you, blame vs not, we are men :

Come, let thy Muse beare vp a smooother fayle,
Tis the easiest and the basest Arte to raile.

Hor. Deliuer me your hands, I loue you both,
As deare as my owne soule, prooue me, and when
I shall traduce you, make me the scorn of men.

Both. Enough, we are friends.

Cri. What reads Asinius?

Asi. By my troth heer's an excellent comfortable
booke, it's most sweet reading in it.

Dem. Why, what does it smell of Bubo?

Asi. Mas it smells of Rose-leaues a little too.

Hor. Then it must be a sweet booke, he would
faine perfume his ignorance.

Asi. I warrant he had wit in him that pen'd it.

Crij. Tis good yet a foole will confesse truth.

Asi. The whoorson made me meete with a hard
stile in two or three places as I went ouer him.

Dem. I beleeeue thee, for they had need to be very
lowe & easie Stiles of wit that thy braines goe ouer.

Enter Blunt and Tucca.

Blun. Wher's this gallant? Morrow Gentlemen :
what's this deuise done yet Horace?

Hor. Gods so, what meane you to let this fellow
dog you into my Chamber?

Blun. Oh, our honest Captayne, come, prethee let
vs see.

Tuc. Why you bastards of nine whoores, the Muses,
why do you walke heere in this gorgeous gallery of
gallant inuentions, with that whooreson poor lyme &
hayre-rascal? why—

Crij. O peace good Tucca, we are all sworne
friends,

Tuc. Sworne, that Iudas yonder that walkes in
Rug, will dub you Knights ath Poste, if you serue
vnder his band of oaths, the copper-fact rascal wil for
a good supper out sweare twelue dozen of graund
Iuries.

Blun. A pox ont, not done yet, and bin about it three dayes ?

Horr. By Iesu within this houre, saue you Captayne Tucca.

Tuc. Dam thee, thou thin bearded Hermaphrodite, dam thee, Ile saue my selfe for one I warrant thee, is this thy Tub Diogines ?

Hor. Yes Captaine this is my poore lodging.

Asn. *Morrow Captaine Tucca*, will you whiffe this morning ?

Tuc. Art thou there goates pizzel ; no godamercy Caine I am for no whiffs I, come hether sheep-skin-weauer, s'foote thou lookst as though th' adst beg'd out of a Iayle : drawe, I mean not thy face (for tis not worth drawing) but drawe neere : this way martch, follow your commaunder you scoundrell : So, thou must run of an errand for mee Mephosphiles.

Hor. To doe your pleasure Captayne I will, but whether.

Tuc. To hell, thou knowst the way, to hell my fire and brimstone, to hell ; dost stare my Sarsens-head at Newgate ? dost gloate ? Ile march through thy dunnirk's guts for shooting iestes at me.

Hor. Deare Captaine but one word.

Tuc. Out bench-whistler out, ile not take thy word for a dagger Pye : you browne-bread-mouth flinker, ile teach thee turne me into Bankes his horse, and to tell gentlemen I am a Iugler, and can shew trickes.

Hor. Captaine Tucca, but halfe a word in your eare.

Tuc. No you staru'd rascal, thou't bite off mine eares then, you must haue three or foure suites of names, when like a lowfie Pediculous vermin th'ast but one suite to thy backe : you must be call'd Asper, and Criticus, and Horace, thy tytle's longer a reading then the Stile a the big Turkes : Asper, Criticus, Quintus, Horatius, Flaccus.

Hor. Captaine I know vpon what euen bases I stand, and therefore—

Tuc. Bases ! wud the roague were but ready for me.

Blun. Nay prethee deare Tucca, come you shall shake—

Tuc. Not hands with great Hunkes there, not hands, but Ile shake the gull-groper out of his tan'd skinne.

Crisp. & Deme. For our sake Captaine, nay prethee holde.

Tuc. Thou wrongst heere a good honest rascall Crispinus, and a poore varlet Demetrius Fanninus (bretheren in thine owne trade of Poetry) thou sayst Crispinus Sattin dublet is Reauel'd out heere, and that this penurious sneaker is out of elboes, goe two my good full mouth'd ban-dog, Ile ha thee friends with both.

Hor. With all my heart captaine Tucca, and with you too, Ile laye my handes vnder your feete, to keepe them from aking.

Omnes. Can you have any more ?

Tuc. Saist thou me so, olde Coale come ! doo't then ; yet tis no matter neither, Ile haue thee in league first with these two rowlypowlies : they shal be thy Damons and thou their Pithyasse ; Crispinus shall giue thee an olde cast Sattin suite, and Demetrius shall write thee a Scene or two, in one of thy strong garlicke Comedies ; and thou shalt take the guilt of conscience for't, and sweare tis thine owne olde lad, tis thine owne : thou neuer yet fels't into the hands of sattin, didst !

Hor. Neuer Captaine I thanke God.

Tuc. Goe too, thou shalt now King Gorboduck, thou shalt, because Ile ha thee damn'd, Ile ha thee all in Sattin : Asper, Criticus, Quintus, Horatius, Flaccus, Crispinus shal doo't, thou shalt doo't, heyre apparant of Helicon, thou shalt doo't.

As. Mine Ingle weare an olde cast Sattin suite ?

Tuc. I waser-face your Ningle.

Asi. If he carry the minde of a Gentleman, he'll scorne it at's heeles.

Tuc. Mary muffle, my man a ginger-bread, wilt eate any small coale?

Asi. No Captaine, wod you should well know it, great coale shall not fill my bellie.

Tuc. Scorne it, dost scorne to be arrested at one of his olde Suites?

Hor. No Captaine, Ile weare any thing.

Tuc. I know thou wilt, I know th'art an honest low minded Pigmey, for I ha seene thy shoulders lapt in a Plaiers old cast Cloake, like a Slie knaue as thou art: and when thou ranst mad for the death of Horatio: thou borrowedst a gowne of Roscius the Stager, (that honest Nicodemus) and sentest it home lowlie, didst not? *Responde*, didst not?

Blun. So, so, no more of this, within this houre—

Hor. If I can sound retreate to my wits, with whome this leader is in skirmish, Ile end within this houre.

Tuc. What wut end? wut hang thy selfe now? has he not writ Finis yet Jacke? what will he bee fiteene weekes about this Cockatrices egge too? has hee not cackeld yet? not laide yet?

Blunt. Not yet he sweares hee will within this houre.

Tuc. His wittes are somewhat hard bound: the Puncke his Muse has fore labour ere the whoore bee deliuered: the poore saffron-cheeke Sun-burnt Gipsie wantes Phisicke; giue the hungrie-face pudding-pye-eater ten Pilles: ten shillings my faire Angelica, they'll make his Muse as yare as a tumbler.

Blu. He shall not want for money if heele write.

Tuc. Goe by Ieronimo, goe by; and heere, drop the ten shillings into this Bafon; doe, drop, when Iacke? hee shall call me his Mæcenas: besides, Ile dam vp's Ouen-mouth for rayling at's: So, ist right Iacke? ist sterling? fall off now to the vanward of yonder foure Stinkers, and aske alowde if wee shal

goe? the Knight shall defray Iacke, the Knight when it comes to *Summa totalis*, the Knyght, the Knight.—

Blu. Well Gentlemen, we'll leaue you, shall we goe Captaine? good Horrace make some hast.

Hor. Ile put on wings.

Afin. I never sawe mine Ingle so dasht in my life before.

Cris. Yes once Afinius.

Afin. Mas you say true, hee was dasht worfe once going (in a rainy day) with a speech to 'th Tilt-yard, by Gods lyd has call'd him names, a dog would not put vp, that had any discreation.

Tuc. Holde, holde vp thy hand, I ha seene the day thou didst not scorne to holde vp thy golles: ther's a Souldiers Spur-royall, twelue pence: Stay, because I know thou canst not write without quick-filuer: vp agen, this goll agen, I giue thee double presse-money: Stay, because I know thou hast a noble head, ile deuide my Crowne, & royall Porrex, ther's a teston more; goe, thou and thy Muse munch, doe, munch; come my deare Mandrake, if Skeldring fall not to decay, thou shalt florish: farewell my sweet *Amadis de Gaule*, farewell.

Hor. Deare Captaine.

Tuc. Come Iacke.

Dem. Nay Captaine stay, we are of your band.

Tuc. March faire then:

Cri. Horace farewell, adue Afinius. *Exeunt.*

Afin. Ningle lets goe to some Tauerne, and dine together, for my stomache rises at this scurvy leather Captaine.

Hor. No, they haue choakt me with mine owne disgrace,
Which(fooles) ile spit againe euen in your face. *Exeunt.*

Enter Sir Quintilian Shorthofe, Sir Adam, Sir Vaug-
ham, Mineuer with *seruingmen*.

Sir quinti. Knaues, Varlets, what Lungis, giue me a dozen of stooles there.

Sir Vau. Sefu plesse vs all in our siue fences a peece, what meane yee sir Kintilian Sorthofe to stand so much on a dozen stooles, heere be not preeches inuffe to hyde a dozen stooles, vnlesse you wisse some of vs preake his finnes.

Sir quin. I say sir Vaughan no shinne shal be broken heer, what lungis, a chayre with a stronge backe, and a soft bellie, great with childe, with a cushion for this reuerend Lady.

Mineu. God neuer gaue me the grace to be a Lady, yet I ha beene worshipt in my conscience to my face a thousand times, I cannot denye sir Vaughan, but that I haue all implements, belonging to the vocation of a Lady.

Sir Vaughan. I trust mistris Mineuer you haue all a honest oman shud haue?

Min. Yes perdie, as my Coach, and my fan, and a man or two that serue my turne, and other things which Ide bee loath euery one should see, because they shal not be common, I am in manner of a Lady in one point.

Sir Vaug. I pray mistris Mineuers, let vs all see that point for our better vnderstanding.

Mi. For I ha some thinges that were fetcht (I am sure) as faire as some of the Low Countries, and I payde sweetly for them too, and they tolde me they were good for Ladies.

Sir qui. And much good do't thy good heart faire widdow them.

Min. I am fayre enough to bee a Widdow, Sir Quintilian.

Sir Vaug. In my soule and conscience, and well fauoured enough to be a Lady: heere is sir Kintilian Sorthofe, and heere is sir Adam Prickshaft, a sentleman of a very good braine, and well headed; you see he shootes his bolt fildome, but when Adam lets goe, he hits: and heere is sir Vaughan ap Rees, and I beleue if God fud take vs all from his mercy, as I hope hee will not yet; we all three loue you, at the

bottom of our bellyes, and our hearts : and therefore mistress Mineuer, if you please, you shall be knighted by one of vs, whom you shall desire to put into your deuice and minde.

Min. One I must haue sir Vaughan.

Sir quin. And one of vs thou shalt haue widdow.

Min. One I must haue, for now euery one seekes to crow ouer me.

Sir Vaug. By Sefu and if I finde any crowing ouer you, & he were a cocke (come out as farre as in Turkeys country) tis possible to cut his combe off.

Min. I muse why sir Adam Prickshaft flies so farre from vs.

Sir Adam. I am in a browne study, my deare, if loue should bee turned into a beast, what beast hee were fit to bee turned into.

Sir quinti. I thinke Sir Adam an Asse, because of his bearing.

Min. I thinke (fauing your reuerence) Sir Adam a puppy, for a dog is the most louing creature to a christian that is, vnles it be a childe.

Sir Ad. No, I thinke if loue should bee turn'd away, and goe to serue any beast, it must bee an Ape, and my reason——

Sir Vaug. Sir Adam, an Ape? ther's no more reason in an Ape, than in a very plaine Monkey; for an Ape has no tayle, but we all know, or tis our duty to know, loue has two tayles; In my iudgment, if loue be a beast, that beast is a bunce of Reddis; for a bunce of Reddis is wife meate without Mutton, and so is loue.

Mi. Ther's the yawning Captaine (fauing your reuerence that has such a fore mouth) would one day needes perfwade me, that loue was a Rebato; and his reason was (fauing your reuerence) that a Rebato was worne out with pinning too often; and so he said loue was.

Sir Vaug. And Master Captaine Tucca sayd wisely too, loue is a Rebato indeede: a Rebato must

be poaked ; now many women weare Rebatoes, and many that weare Rebatoes——

Sir Adam. Muſt be poakt.

Sir Vau. Sir Adam Prickſhaft has hit the cloute.

Muficke.

Sir qui. The Muſicke ſpeakes to vs, we'll haue a daunce before dinner.

Enter Sir Walter Terrill, Cæleſtine, Blunt, Crispinus, and Demetrius, *every one with a Lady.*

All. The King's at hand.

Ter. Father the King's at hand.

Muſicke talke lowder, that thy ſiluer voice,
May reach my Soueraignes eares.

Sir Vaug. I pray doe ſo, Muſitions beſtir your fingers, that you may haue vs all by the eares.

Sir quin. His Grace comes, a Hall varlets, where be my men ? blow, blow your colde Trumpets till they ſweate ; tickle them till they found agen.

Blun. Beſt goe meete his Grace.

All. Agreed.

Sir Vaug. Pray all ſtand bare, as well men as women : Sir Adam is beſt you hide your head for feare your wife braines take key-colde : on afore Sir Kintilian ; Sentlemen fall in before the Ladyes, in ſeemely order and faſhion ; ſo this is comelye.

Enter Trumpets ſounding, they goe to the doore, and meete the King and his Traine, and whiſt the Trumpets ſound the King is welcom'd, kiſſes the Bride, and honors the Bridegroome in dumbe ſhew.

King. Nay if your pleaſures ſhrinke at ſight of vs,
We ſhall repent this labour, Miſtris Bride
You that for ſpeaking but one word to day,
Muſt looſe your head at night ; you that doe ſtand
Taking your laſt leaue of virginity ;
You that being well begun, muſt not be Maide :
Winne you the Ladies, I the men will wooe,
Our ſelfe will leade my bluſhing Bride with you.

Sir Vaughan. God bleſſe your Maieſty, and ſend you to be a long King William Rufus ouer vs, when he ſees his times & pleaſures.

King. Wee thanke you good Sir Vaughan, wee will take your meaning not your words.

Sir quint. Lowde Muſicke there.

Sir Vau. I am glad your Maieſty will take any thing at my hands; my words I truſt in Sefu, are ſpoken betweene my ſoule and body together, and haue neither Felonies nor treaſons about them, I hope.

King. Good words, Sir Vaughan, I prethee giue vs leaue.

Vaug. Good words ſir Vaughan? thats by interpretation in english, you'r beſt giue good words ſir Vaughan: god and his Anſells bleſſe me, what ayles his maieſtye to be ſo tedious and difficult in his right mindes now, I holde my life that file rascal-rymer Horace hath puzd and puzd aboue a hundred merie tales and lyce, into his great and princely eares: by god and he vſe it, his Sapline too ide preaſe vpon his coxcomb: good lord bleſſe me out of his maieſties celler: King Williams, I hope tis none offences to make a ſupplication to god a mightie for your long life: for by ſheſu I haue no meaning in't in all the world, vnles rascalls be here that will haue your grace take ſhalke for ſhees, and vnleſſe Horace has ſent lyce to your maieſty.

King. Horace, what's he ſir Vaughan?

Vaug. As hard-fauoured a fellow as your maieſtie has ſeene in a ſommers day: he does pen, an't pleaſe your grace, toyes that will not pleaſe your grace: tis a Poet, we call them Bardes in our Countrie, ſinges ballads and rymes, and I was mightie ſealous, that his Inke which is blacke and full of gall, had brought my name to your maieſtie, and ſo liſted vp your hye and princely collar.

King. I neither know that Horace, nor mine anger, If as thou ſaiſt our high and princely choller

Be vp, wee'l tread it downe with daunces ; Ladies
Loose not your men ; faire measures must be tread,
When by so faire a dauncer you are lead.

Vaugh. Mistris Miniuer :

Miu. Perdie fir Vaughan I cannot daunce.

Vaugh. Perdie by this Miniuer cappe, and acording to his maiesties leaue too, you shall be put in among theise Ladies, & daunce ere long I trest in god, the faking of the feetes.

They daunce a straine, and whilst the others keepe on, the King and Celestine stay.

Kin. That turne faire Bride shews you must turne at night,

In that sweet daunce which steales away delight.

Cal. Then pleasure is a thiefe, a fit, a feauer :

Kin. True, he's the thiefe, but women the receiuer.

Another change ; they fall in, the rest goe on.

Kin. This change sweet Maide, saies you must change your life,

As Virgins doe.

Cal. Virgins nere change their life,

She that is wiu'd a maide, is Maide and wife.

Kin. But she that dyes a Maide ;—

Cal. Thrice happy then.

Kin. Leades Apes in hell.

Cal. Better leade Apes then men.

At this third change they end, and she meetes the King.

Kin. Well met,

Cal. Tis ouertaken.

Kin. Why faire sweet ?

Cal. Women are ouertaken when they meete ;

King. Your blood speakes like a coward.

Cal. It were good,

If euery Maiden blush, had such a blood.

Kin. A coward blood, why whom should maidens feare ?

Ca. Men, were Maides cowards, they'd not come
so nere,

My Lord the Measure's done, I pleade my duetie.

Kin. Onelie my heart takes measure of thy beautie.

Sir quin. Now by my hofe I sweare, that's no deepe
oath,

This was a fine sweet earth-quake gentlie moou'd,
By the soft winde of whifpring Silkes : come Ladies,
Whofe ioynts are made out of the dauncing Orbes,
Come, follow me, walke a colde measure now ;
In the Brides Chamber ; your hot beautie's melt,
Take euerie one her fan, giue them their places,
And waue the Northerne winde vpon your faces.

*Celestine and all the Ladyes doing obeysance to the
King, who onely kiffes her, Exeunt, Short-hofe
manning them, the Gallants stand aloofe.*

Kin. Sir Walter Terrill.

Ter. My confirmed Leige.

Ki. Beautie out of her bountie, thee hath lent
More then her owne with liberall extent.

Ter. What meanes my Lord ?

Kin. Thy Bride, thy choice, thy wife,
She that is now thy fadom, thy new world,
That brings thee people, and makes little subiects ;
Kneelee at thy feete, obay in euerie thing,
So euerie Father is a priuate King.

Ter. My Lord, her beauty is the pooreft part,
Chieflye her vertues did endowe my heart.

Kin. Doe not back-bite her beauties, they all
shine,

Brighter on thee, becaufe the beames are thine,
To thee more faire, to others her two lips
Shew like a parted Moone in thine Eclipse ;
That glaunce, which louers mongft themfelues deuife,
Walkes as inuifible to others eies :
Giue me thine eare.

Ter. What meanes the King ?

Dem. Tis a quaint straine.

Ter. My Lord.

King. Thou darst not Wat.

Ter. She is too coarse an object for the Court.

Kin. Thou darst not Wat : let to night be to morrow,

Ter. For shee's not yet mine owne.

Rin. Thou darst not Wat !

Ter. My Lord I dare, but——

King. But I see thou darst not.

Ter. This night.

King. Yea, this night, tush thy minde repaires not,
The more thou talk'st of night, the more thou darst not ;

Thus farre I tend, I woud but turne this spheare,
Of Ladies eyes, and place it in the Court,
Where thy faire Bride should for the Zodiacke shine,
And every Lady else fit for a signe.

But all thy thoughts are yellow, thy sweet bloud
Rebels, th'art iealous Wat ; thus with proude reuels
To emmulate the masking firmament,
Where Starres dance in the siluer Hall of heauen,
Thy pleasure should be seasoned, and thy bed
Relish thy Bride, But, but thou darst not Wat.

Ter. My Loord I dare.

Kin. Speake that agen.

Ter. I dare.

King. Agen kinde Wat, and then I know thou darst.

Ter. I dare and will by that ioynt holy oath,
Which she and I swore to the booke of heauen.
This very day when the surueying Sunne,
Riz like a witnes to her faith and mine,
By all the loyalty that subiects owe
To Maiesty, by that, by this, by both,
I fweare to make a double guarded oath,
This night vntainted by the touch of man,
She shall a Virgin come.

Kin. To Court? *Ter.* To Court.
I know I tooke a woman to my wife,

And I know women to be earthly Moones,
That neuer shine till night, I know they change
Their Orbes (their husbands) and in sickish hearts,
Steale to their sweete Endimions, to be cur'd
With better Phisicke, sweeter dyet drinckes,
Then home can minifter : all this I know
Yet know not all, but giue me leaue O King,
To boast of mine, and saie that I know none ;
I haue a woman but not such a one.

Kin. Why, she's confirmed in thee ; I now ap-
prooue her,
If constant in thy thoughts who then can mooue her ?

Enter Sir Quintilian.

Sir qui. Wilt please your Highnes take your place
within,
The Ladies attend the Table.

Kin. I goe good Knight ; Wat thy oath.

Ter. My Lord,
My oath's my honour, my honour is my life,
My oath is constant, so I hope my wife. *Exeunt.*

*Enter Horace in his true attyre, Asinius bearing his
Cloake.*

Asi. If you flye out Ningle, heer's your Cloake ; I
thinke it raines too.

Ho. Hide my shoulders in't.

Asi. Troth so th'adst neede, for now thou art in
thy Pee and Kue ; thou hast such a villanous broad
backe, that I warrant th'art able to beare away any
mans iestes in England.

Hor. It's well Sir, I ha strength to beare yours mee
thinkes ; fore God you are growne a piece of a Critist,
since you fell into my hands : ah little roague, your
wit has pickt vp her crums prettie and well.

Asi. Yes faith, I finde my wit a the mending hand

Ningle; troth I doe not thinke but to proceede Poet-
after next Commencement, if I haue my grace per-
fectlie: euerie one that confer with me now, stop their
nose in merriment, and sweare I smell somewhat of
Horace; one calles me Horaces Ape, another Horaces
Beagle, and such Poeticall names it passeth. I was but
at Barbers last day, and when he was rencing my face,
did but crie out, fellow thou makst me *Connie* too
long, & sayes he sayes hyee, Master *Afinius Bubo*, you
haue eene Horaces wordes as right as if he had spit
them into your mouth.

Hor. Well, away deare *Afinius*, deliuer this letter
to the young Gallant *Drufo*, he that fell so strongly in
loue with mee yesternight.

Afin. It's a sweete Muske-cod, a pure spic'd-gull;
by this feather I pittie his *Ingenuities*; but hast writ
all this since Ningle! I know thou hast a good run-
ning head and thou listest.

Hor. Foh come, your great belly'd wit must long
for euery thing too; why you *Rooke*, I haue a set of
letters readie starcht to my hands, which to any fresh
suiued gallant, that but newlie enters his name into
my rowle, I send the next morning, ere his ten a
clocke dreame has rize from him, onelie with clapping
my hand to't, that my Nouice shall start, ho and his
haire stand an end, when hee sees the sodaine flash of
my writing: what you prettie Diminitue rogue, we
must haue false fiers to amaze these spangle babies,
these true heires of Ma. Justice Shallow.

Afi. I woe alwaies haue thee fauce a foole thus.

Hor. Away, and, stay: here be Epigrams vpon
Tucca, divulge these among the gallants; as for
Crispinus, that *Crispin*-asse and *Fannius* his Play-
dresser; who (to make the Muses beleue, their sub-
iects eares were staru'd, and that there was a dearth of
Poetrie) cut an Innocent Moore i'th middle, to serue
him in twice; & when he had done, made Poules-
worke of it, as for these Twynnes, these *Poet-apes*:
Their Mimicke trickes shall serue

With mirth to feast our Muse, whilst their owne starue.

Asin. Well Ningle Ile trudge, but where's the
Randeuow ?

Hor. Well thought off, marie at Sir Vaughans
lodging the Welsh knight, I haue compos'd a loue-
letter for the gallants worship, to his Rosamond : the
second, Mistris Miniuer, because she does not thinke
so foundly of his lame English as he could wish ; I
ha gull'd his Knight ship heere to his face, yet haue
given charge to his wincking vnderstanding not to per-
ceiue it : nay Gods so, away deare Bubo.

Asi. I am gone.

Exit.

Hor. The Muses birdes the Bees were hui'd and
fled,

Vs in our cradle, thereby prophecyng ;

That we to learned eares should sweetly sing,

But to the vulger and adulterate braine,

Should loath to prostitute our Virgin straine.

No, our sharpe pen shall keep the world in awe,

Horace thy Poesie, wormwood wreathes shall weare,

We hunt not for mens loues but for their feare. *Exit.*

Enter Sir Adam and Miniuer.

Min. O Sir Adam Prickshaft, you are a the bow
hand wide, a long yard I assure you : and as for
Suitors, truelie they all goe downe with me, they haue
all one flat answere.

Sir Adam. All Widdow ? not all, let Sir Adam bee
your first man still.

Enter Sir Quintilian.

Sir quin. Widdow, art stolne from Table ? I Sir
Adam,

Are you my riuall ? well, flye faire y' are best ;

The King's exceeding merrie at the banquet,

He makes the Bride blush with his merrie words

That run into her eares ; ah he's a wanton,

Yet I dare trust her, had he twentie tongues,

And euerie tongue a Stile of Maiestie.

Now Widdow, let me tell thee in thine eare,
I loue thee Widdow, by this ring ; nay weare it.

Mincu. Ile come in no rings pardie, Ile take no
golde.

Sir Ada. Harke in thine eare, take me, I am no
golde.

Enter Sir Vaughan and Peter Flash.

Sir Vau. Master Peter Flash, I will grope about
Sir Quintilian, for his terminations touching and con-
sidering you.

Flash. I thanke your Worship, for I haue as good
a stomacke to your Worship as a man could wish.

Sir Vau. I hope in God a mightie, I shall fill your
stomack Master Peter : What two vpon one Gentle-
men ; Mistris Miniuer, much good doo't you Sir
Adam.

Sir quin. Sir Vaughan, have you din'd well Sir
Vaughan ?

Sir Vau. As good feere as would make any hun-
grie man (and a were in the vilest prison in the world)
eate and hee had anie stomacke : One word Sir
Quintilian in hugger mugger ; heere is a Gentleman
of yours, Master Peter Flash, is tefirous to haue his
blew coate pul'd ouer his eares ; and

Flash. No, Sir, my petition runs thus, that your
worshippe would thrust me out of doores, and that I
may follow Sir Vaughan.

Sir Vau. I can tell you Master Flash, and you
follow mee I goe verie fast, I thinke in my conscience,
I am one of the lightest knights in England.

Flash. It's no matter Sir, the Flasches haue euer
bin knowne to be quicke and light enough.

Sir quin. Sir Vaughan, he shal follow you, he shall
dog you good Sir Vaughan.

Enter Horace walking.

Sir Vau. Why then Peter Flash I will fet my foure
markes a yeare, and a blew coate vpon you.

Fla. Godamercy to your worship, I hope you shall neuer repent for me.

Sir Vau. You beare the face of an honest man, for you blush passing well Peter, I will quench the flame out of your name, and you shall be christned Peter Salamander.

Peter Flash. The name 's too good for me, I thanke your worship.

Sir Vau. Are you come Master Horace, you sent mee the Coppie of your letters countenance, and I did write and read it; your wittes truelie haue done verie valliantlie: tis a good inditements, you haue put in enough for her ha you not?

Hor. According to my instructions.

Sir Vau. Tis passing well, I pray Master Horace walke a little beside your selfe, I will turne vpon you incontinent.

Sir qui. What Gentleman is this in the Mandilian, a foldyer?

Sir Vau. No, tho he has a very bad face for a fouldier, yet he has as desperate a wit as euer any Scholler went to cusses for; tis a Gentleman Poet, he has made rimes called Thalamimums, for M. Pridegroome, on vrd widdow.

Sir qui. Is this he? welcome Sir, your name? pray you walke not so statelie, but be acquainted with me boldlie; your name Sir?

Hor. Quintus, Horacius, Flaccus.

Sir Quint. Good Master Flappus welcome.

He walkes vp and downe.

Sir Vau. Mistris Miniuer, one vrde in your corner heere; I desire you to breake my armes heere, and read this Paper, you shall feele my mindes and affections in it, at full and at large.

Mini. Ile receiue no Loue libels perdy, but by word a mouth.

Sir Vaughan. By Sefu tis no libell, for heere is my hand to it.

Mini. Ile ha no hand in it Sir Vaughan, Ile not deale with you.

Sir Vau. Why then widdow, Ile tell you by word a mouth my deuices.

Mi. Your deuices come not neere my mouth Sir Vaughan perdy, I was vpon a time in the way to marriage, but now I am turn'd a tother side, I ha sworne to leade a single and simple life.

Sir Adam. She has answer'd you Sir Vaughan.

Sir Vau. Tis true, but at wrong weapons Sir Adam; will you be an Assie Mistris Miniuers?

Min. If I be you shall not ride me.

Sir Vaug. A simple life! by Sefu tis the life of a foole, a simple life!

Sir qui. How now Sir Vaughan?

Sir Vaug. My braines has a little fine quawme come vnder it, and therefore Sir Adam, and Sir Quintilian, and mistris Miniuer caps God bo'y.

All. Good Sir Vaughan.

Sir Vaug. Master Horace, your inuentions doe her no good in the Vniuersalities; yet heere is two shillings for your wittes; nay by Sefu you shall take it if 't were more: yonder bald Adams, is put my nose from his ioynt; but Adam I will be euen to you: this is my cogitations, I will indite the Ladies & Miniuer caps to a dinner of Plumbes, and I shall desire you M. Horace, to speake or raile; you can raile I hope in God a mighty.

Hor. You meane to speake bitterlie:

Sir Vaughan. Right, to spitte bitterlie vpon baldnes, or the thinnes of haire; you fall eate downe Plumbes to sweeten your mouth, and heere is a good Anfell to defend you: Peter Salamander follow me.

Flash. With hue and crie and you will Sir.

Sir Vau. Come M. Horace, I will goe pull out the Ladies.

Ho. And Ile set out my wits, Baldnes the Theame? My words shall flow hye in a siluer streame. *Exunt.*

Enter Tucca brushing off the crumbes.

Tuc. Wher's my most costly and sumptuous Short-hole ?

Sir Quint. Is the King risen from table Captaine Tucca ?

Tuc. How ? risen ? no my noble Quintilian, kings are greater men then we Knights and Caualliers, and therefore must eate more then lesser persons ; God-amercy good Diues for these crummes : how now ? has not Frier Tucke din'd yet ? he falles so hard to that Oyfter-pye yonder.

Sir quin. Oyfter-pye Captaine ? ha, ha, he loues her, and I loue her and feare both shall goe without her.

Tuc. Dost loue her, my finest and first part of the Mirrour of Knighthood ? hange her she lookes like a bottle of ale, when the corke flies out and the Ale fomes at mouth, shee lookes my good button-breech like the signe of Capricorne, or like Tiborne when it is couer'd with snow.

Sir quin. All's one for that, she has a vizard in a bagge, will make her looke like an Angell ; I wod I had her, vpon condition, I gaue thee this chaine manlie Tucca.

Tuc. I ? faist thou so Friskin ? I haue her ath hip for some causes, I can found her, she'll come at my becke.

Sir quin. Wod I could found her too Noble commander.

Tuc. Thou shalt doo't ; that Lady ath Lake is thine Sir Tristram, lend mee thy chaine, doe, lend it, Ile make her take it as a token, Ile lincke her vnto thee ; and thou shalt weare hergloue in thy Worshipfull hatte like to a leather brooch ; Nay and thou mistrusts thy coller, be tyed in't still.

Sir quin. Mistrust Captaine ? no, heere tis, giue it her if she'll take it, or weare it thy selfe if shee'll take mee, Ile watch him well enough too.

Tuc. No more, Ile shoote away yonder Prickshaft,

and then belabour her, and flye you after yonder Cucko : dost heere me my noble Gold-finch ? —

Sir qui. No more.

Tuc. How dost thou my smug Belimperia ! how dost thou ! hands off my little bald Derricke, hands off : harko hether Susanna, beware a these two wicked Elders, shall I speake well or ill of thee !

Min. Nay, eene as you please Captaine, jt, shal be at your choice.

Tuc. Why well said, my nimble Short-hose.

Sir quin. I heare her, I heare her.

Tuc. Art angry father time ? art angrie because I tooke mother-Winter aside ! Ile holde my life thou art strucke with Cupids Birde-bolt, my little prick-shaft, art ! dost loue that mother Mumble-crust, dost thou ! dost long for that whim-wham ?

Sir Ada. Wod I were as sure to lye with her, as to loue her.

Tuc. Haue I found thee my learned Dunce, haue I found thee ? If I might ha my wil, thou shouldst not put thy spoone into that bumble-broth (for indeede Ide taste her my felse) no thou shouldst not : yet if her beautie blinde thee, she's thine, I can doo't, thou heardst her say eene now, it should bee at my choice.

Sir Ada. She did so, worke the match and Ile bestow—

Tuc. Not a filke point vpon mee, little Adam shiee shall be thy Eeue, for lesse then an Apple ; but send, bee wife, send her some token, shiee's greedie, shiee shall take it, doe, send, thou shalt sticke in her (Prickshaft) but send.

Sir Adam. Heer's a purse of golde, thinke you that wil be accepted ?

Tuc. Goe to, it shall bee accepted, and twere but siluer, when that Flea-bitten Short-hose steppes hence : vanish too, and let mee alone with my Grannam in Gutter-Lane there, and this purse of golde doe, let me alone.

Sir quin. The King, gods Lord, I doe forget the King;

Widdow, thinke on my wordes, I must be gone
To waite his rising, Ile returne anone.

Sir Ad. Stay Sir Quintilian, Ile be a waiter too.

Sir quint. Widdow wee'll trust that Captaine there
with you. *Exeunt.*

Tuc. Now, now, mother Bunch how dost thou?
what dost frowne Queene Gwyniuer? dost wrinkle?
what made these paire of Shittle-cockes heere? what
doe they fumble for? Ile ha none of these Kites
fluttering about thy carkas, for thou shalt bee my
West Indyas, and none but trim Tucca shall discouer
thee.

Min. Discouer me? discouer what thou canst of
me.

Tuc. What I can? thou knowst what I can discouer,
but I will not lay thee open to the world.

Min. Lay me open to the world?

Tuc. No I will not my moldie decay'd Charing-crosse,
I will not.

Min. Hang thee patch-pannell, I am none a thy
Charing-crosse: I scorne to be Crosse to such a scab as
thou makst thy selfe.

Tuc. No, tis thou makst me so, my Long Meg a
Westminster, thou breedst a scab, thou—

Min. I? dam thee filthie Captaine, dam thy selfe.

Tuc. My little deuill a Dow-gate, Ile dam thee,
thou knowst my meaning) Ile dam thee vp; my wide
mouth at Bishops-gate.

Min. Wod I might once come to that damming.

Tuc. Why thou shalt, my sweet dame Annis a
cleere thou shalt, for Ile drowne my selfe in thee; I,
for thy loue, Ile sinke, I, for thee.

Min. So thou wilt I warrant, in thy abhominable
sinnes; Lord, Lord, howe many filthy words hast thou
to answere for.

Tuc. Name one Madge-owlet, name one, Ile answer
for none; my words shall be forth comming at

all times, & shall answer for them selues ; my nimble Cat-a-mountaine : they shall Sisse Bum-trincket, for Ile giue thee none but Suger-candie words, I will not Puffe : goody Tripe-wife, I will not.

Min. Why dost call mee such horrible vngodlie names then ?

Tuc. Ile name thee no more Mother Red-cap vpon paine of death, if thou wilt Grimalkin, Maggot-a-pye I will not.

Min. Wod thou shouldst wel know, I am no Maggot, but a meere Gentlewoman borne.

Tuc. I know thou art a Gentle, and Ile nibble at thee, thou shalt be my Cap-a-maintenance, & Ile carrie my naked sword before thee, my reuerend Ladie Lettice-cap.

Min. Thou shalt carry no naked swords before me to fright me, thou—

Tuc. Go too, let not thy tongue play so hard at hot-cockles ; for, Gammer Gurton, I meane to bee thy needle, I loue thee, I loue thee, because thy teeth stand like the Arches vnder London Bridge, for thou't not turne Satyre & bite thy husband ; No, come my Cub, doe not scorne mee because I goe in Stag, in Buffe, heer's veluet too ; thou seest I am worth thus much in bare veluet.

Min. I scorne thee not, not I.

Tuc. I know thou dost not, thou shalt see that I could march with two or three hundred linkes before me, looke here, what ? I could shew golde too, if that would tempt thee, but I would not make my selfe a Gold-smithes stall I ; I scorne to goe chain'd my Ladie ath Hospitall, I doe ; yet I will and must bee chain'd to thee.

Min. To mee ? why Master Captaine, you know that I haue my choise of three or foure payre of Knights, and therefore haue small reason to flye out I know not how in a man of war.

Tuc. A man a warre ? come thou knowst not what a worshipfull focation tis to be a Captaines wife :

three or foure payre of Knights? why dost heare
Ioane-a-bedlam, Ile enter into bond to be dub'd by
what day thou wilt, when the next action is layde
vpon me, thou shalt be Ladified.

Mini. You know I am offered that by halfe a
dozen.

Tuc. Thou shalt little Miniuer, thou shalt, Ile ha
this frocke turn'd into a foote-cloth: and thou shalt
be carted drawne I meane, Coacht, Coacht, thou
shalt ryde ligga-logge; a Hood shall flap vp and
downe heere, and this shipskin-cap shall be put off.

Mini. Nay perdie, Ile put off my cap for no mans
pleasure.

Tuc. Wut thou be proude little Lucifer? well,
thou shalt goe how then thou wilt Maide-marian;
come buffe thy little Anthony now, now, my cleane
Cleopatria; so, so, goe thy waies Alexis secrets, th'ast
a breath as sweet as the Rose, that growes by the Beare-
garden, as sweete as the proud'ft head a Garlicke in
England: come, wut march in, to the Gentle folkes?

Mini. Nay trulie Captaine you shall be my
leader.

Tuc. I fay Mary Ambree, thou shalt march for-
most,
Because Ile marke how broad th'art in the heeles.

Mini. Perdie, I will be fet ath last for this time.

Tuc. Why then come, we'll walke arme in arme,
As tho we were leading one another to Newgate.

Enter Blunt, Crispinus, and Demetrius, with papers,
laughing.

Cri. Mine's of a fashion, cut out quite from yours.

Dem. Mine has the sharpest tooth, yonder he is. /

Blu. Captaine Tucca. *All hold vp papers.*

Tuc. How now? I cannot stand to read supplica-
tions now.

Cri. They're bitter Epigrams compos'd on you
By Horace.

Dem. And disperst amongst the gallants
In feuerall coppies, by Afinius Bubo.

Tuc. By that liue Eele? read, *Lege Legito*, read
thou Iacke.

Blu. *Tucca's growne monstrous, how! rich? that I
feare,*

He's to be seene for money euery where.

Tuc. Why true, shall not I get in my debts, nay
and the roagie write no better I care not, farewell
blacke Iacke farewell.

Cri. But Captaine heer's a nettle.

Tuc. Sting me, doe.

Cri. *Tucca's exceeding tall and yet not hye,
He fights with skill, but does most vilge lye.*

Tuc. Right, for heere I lye now, open, open, to
make my aduerfarie come on; and then Sir, heere
am I in's bofome: nay and this be the worst, I shal
hug the poore honest face-maker, Ile loue the little
Atheist, when he writes after my commendation, an-
other whip? come yerke me.

Dem. *Tucca will bite, how? growne Satiricall,
No, he bites tables, for he feedes on all.*

Tuc. The whoreson clouen-foote deuill in mans
apparell lyes,

There stood aboue forty dishes before me to day,
That I nere toucht, because they were empty.

Min. I am witnes young Gentlemen to that.

Tuc. Farewell stinckers, I smel thy meaning
Screech-owle, I doe, tho I stop my nose: and Sirra
Poet, we'll haue thee vntrust for this; come, mother
Mum-pudding, come. *Exeunt.*

*Trumpets sound a florish, and then a fennate: Enter
King with Cælestine, Sir Walter Terrill, Sir
Quintilian, Sir Adam, Blunt and other Ladies and
attendants: whilst the Trumpets sound the King
takes his leaue of the Bride-groome, and Sir Quin-
tilian, and last of the Bride.*

Kin. My fong in parting doth this burden beare

A kisse the Ditty, and I fet it heere.
Your lips are well in tune, strung with delight,
By this faire Bride remember soone at night ;
Sir Walter.

Ter. My Leige Lord, we all attend,
The time and place.

Kin. Till then my leaue commend.

They bring him to the doore: Enter at another doore
Sir Vaughan.

Sir Vau. Ladies, I am to put a verie easie suite
vpon you all, and to desire you to fill your little pelliess
at a dinner of plums behinde noone ; there be Suckets,
and Marmilads, and Marchants, and other long white
plummes that faine would kisse your delicate and
sweet lippes ; I indite you all together, and you espe-
cially my Ladie Pride ; what doe you saie for your
felles ? for I indite you all.

Cæl. I thanke you good Sir Vaughan, I will come.

Sir Vau. Say Sentlewomen will you stand to me
too ?

All. Wee'll fit with you sweet Sir Vaughan.

Sir Vau. God a mightie plesse your faces, and
make your peauties last, when wee are all dead and
rotten :—you all will come.

Lady. All will come.

Sir Vaug. Pray God that Horace bee in his right
wittes to raile now.

Exit.

Cris. Come Ladie, you shall be my dauncing
guest.

To treade the maze of musicke with the rest.

Dem. Ile lead you in.

Dicach. A maze is like a doubt :
Tis easie to goe in, hard to get out.

Blun. We follow close behinde.

Philoca. That measure's best.
Now none markes vs, but we marke all the rest.

Exeunt.

Exeunt all sauing Sir Quintilian, Cælestine, and Sir
Walter Terrill.

Ter. Father, and you my Bride ; that name to day
Wife comes not till to-morrow : but omitting
This enterchange of language ; let vs thinke
Vpon the King and night, and ca'l our spirits
To a true reckoning : first to Arme our wittes
With compleat steele of Iudgement, and our tongs
With sound artillery of Phrases : then
Our Bodies must bee motions ; moouing first
What we speake : afterwards, our very knees
Must humbly seeme to talke, and fute out speech ;
For a true furnisht Cortyer hath such force,
Though his tongue faints, his very legs discourse.

Sir quin. Sonne Terrill, thou hast drawne his picture right,

For hee's noe full-made Courtier, nor well strung,
That hath not euery ioynt stucke with a tongue.
Daughter, if Ladies say, that is the Bride, that's she,
Gaze thou at none, for all will gaze at thee.

Cæl. Then, ô my father must I goe ? O my husband

Shall I then goe ? O my selfe, will I goe ?

Sir quin. You must.

Ter. You shall.

Cæl. I will, but giue me leaue,
To say I may not, nor I ought not, say not
Still, I must goe, let me intreate I may not.

Ter. You must and shall, I made a deede of gift,
And gaue my oath vnto the King, I swore
By thy true constancy.

Cæl. Then keep that word
To sweare by, O let me be constant still.

Ter. What shall I cancell faith, and breake my oath ?

Cæl. If breaking constancie, thou breakst them both.

Ter. Thy constancie no euill can pursue.

Cal. I may be constant still, and yet not true.

Ter. As how?

Ca. As thus, by violence detain'd,

They may be constant still, that are constrain'd.

Ter. Constrain'd? that word weighs heavy, yet
my oath

Weighes downe that word; the kinges thoughts are at
oddes,

They are not euen ballanst in his brest;

The King may play the man with me; nay more,

Kings may vsurpe; my wife's a woman; yet

Tis more then I know yet, that know not her,

If she should prooue mankinde, twere rare, fye, fye,

See how I loose my selfe, amongst my thoughts,

Thinking to finde my selfe; my oath, my oath.

Sir quin. I sweare another, let me see, by what,
By my long stocking, and my narrow skirtes,
Not made to sit vpon, she shall to Court.

I haue a tricke, a charme, that shall lay downe

The spirit of lust, and keep thee vndeflowred;

Thy husbands honor sau'd, and the hot King,

Shall haue enough too. Come, a tricke, a charme.

Exit.

Cal. God keep thy honour safe, my blood from
harme.

Ter. Come, my sicke-minded Bride, Ile teach thee
how,

To relish health a little: Taste this thought,

That when mine eyes seru'd loues commission,

Vpon thy beauties I did seise on them,

To a Kings vse; cure all thy grieve with this,

That his great feale was grauen vpon this ring,

And that I was but Steward to a King. *Exeunt.*

*A banquet set out: Enter Sir Vaughan, Horace, Af-
nius Bubo, Lady Petula, Dicache, Philocalia, Mif-
tris Miniuer and Peter Flafh.*

Sir Vaugh. Ladies and Sentlemen, you are almost
all welcome, to this sweet nuncions of Plums.

Dicach. Almost all Sir Vaughan ? why to which of vs are you so niggardly, that you cut her out but a peice of welcome.

Sir Vaugh. My interpretations is that almost all are welcome, because I indited a brace or two more that is not come, I am forrie my Lady Pride is not among you.

Asi. Slid, he makes hounds of vs Ningle, a brace quoth a ?

Sir Vaug. Peter Salamanders draw out the pictures of all the ioynt stooles, & Ladies sit downe vpon their wodden faces.

Flash. I warrant Sir, Ile giue euerie one of them a good stoole.

Sir Vau. Master Horace, Master Horace, when I pray to God, and desire in hipocritnes that bald Sir Adams were heer, then, then, then begin to make your railles at the pouertie and beggerly want of haire.

Hor. Leaue it to my iudgment.

Sir Vau. M. Bubo sit there, you and I wil thinke vpon our ends at the Tables : M. Horace, put your learned bodie into the midst of these Ladies ; so tis no matter to speake graces at nunçions, because we are all past grace since dinner.

Asini. Mas I thanke my destinie I am not past grace, for by this hand full of Carrawaies, I could neuer abide to say grace.

Dica. Mistris Miniuer, is not that innocent Gentleman a kinde of foole ?

Min. Why doe you aske Madam ?

Dicach. Nay for no harme, I aske because I thought you two had been of acquaintanc.

Min. I thinke he's within an Inch of a foole.

Dicach. Madam Philocalia, you sit next that spare Gentleman, wod you heard what Mistris Miniuer saies of you.

Philo. Why what saies she Madam Dicache.

Dica. Nay nothing, but wishes you were married to that small timber'd gallant.

Philo. Your wish and mine are twinnes, I wish so too, for then I should be sure to lead a merrie life.

Afini. Yes faith Ladie, Ide make you laugh, my bolts now and then should be soone shot ; by these comfits, weed let all slide.

Petu. He takes the sweetest oathes that euer I heard a gallant of his pitch sweare ; by these Comfits, & these Carrawaies, I warrant it does him good to sweare.

Afin. Yes faith tis meate and drinke to me.
I am glad Ladie Petula (by this Apple) that they please you.

Sir Vau. Peter Salamanders wine, I beseech you Master Afinius Bubo, not to sweare so deeplie, for there comes no fruite of your oathes ; heere Ladies, I put you all into one corners together, you shall all drinke of one cup.

Afi. Peter I prethee fill me out too.

Flash. Ide sling you out too and I might ha my will, a pox of all fooles.

Sir Vau. Mistris Miniuers, pray bee lustie, wod Sir Adams Prickshaft stucke by you.

Hor. Who, the balde Knight Sir Vaughan ?

Sir Vau. The same M. Horace, he that has but a remnant or parcell of haire, his crowne is clipt and par'd away ; me thinkes tis an excellent qualitie to bee balde ; for and there stucke a nose and two nyes in his pate, he might weare two faces vnder one hood.

Afi. As God saue me la, if I might ha my will, Ide rather be a balde Gentleman then a hairy ; for I am sure the best and tallest Yeomen in England haue balde heads : me thinkes haire is a scurvie lowfie commodity.

Hor. Bubo, herein you blaze your ignorance.

Sir Vau. Pray stop and fill your mouthes, and giue M. Horace all your eares.

Hor. For, if of all the bodies parts, the head
Be the most royall : if discourse, wit, Iudgement,
And all our understanding faculties,
Sit there in their high Court of Parliament,
Enactling lawes to sway this humorous world :

*This little Ile of Man : needes must that crowne,
Which stands vpon this supream head, be faire,
And helde inualluable, and that crowne's the Haire :
The head that wants this honour stands awry,
Is bare in name and in authority.*

Sir Vau. He meanes balde-pates Mistris Miniuers.

Hor. Haire, tis the roabe which curious nature
weaues,

*To hang vpon the head : and does adorne,
Our bodies in the first houre we are borne :
God does beflow that garment : when we dye,
That (like a soft and silken Canopie)
Is still spread ouer vs ; In spite of death
Our hayre growes in our graue, and that alone
Lookes fresh, when all our other beauty's gone.
The excellence of Haire, in this shines cleere,
That the foure Elements take pride to weare
The fashion of it : when Fire most bright does burne,
The flames to golden lockes doe striue to turne ;
When her lasciuious armes the Water hurles,
About the shoares wast, her sleeke head she curls :
And rorid cloudes being suckt into the Ayre,
When downe they melt, hangs like fine siluer hayre.
You see the Earth (whose head so oft is shorne)
Frighted to feele her lockes so rudely torne,
Stands with her haire an end, and (thus afraide)
Turnes euery haire to a greene naked blade.
Besides, (when stricke with grieve) we long to dye,
We spoile that most, which most does beautifie,
We rend this Head-tyre off. I thus conclude,
Cullors set cullors out ; our eyes iudge right,
Of vice or ver ue by their opposite :
So, if faire haire to beauty ad such grace,
Baldnes must needes be ugly, vile and base.*

Sir Vau. True M. Horace, for a bald reason, is a reason that has no haire vpon't, a scurvy scalded reason.

Mi. By my truly I neuer thought you could ha pickt such strange things out of haire before.

Afni. Nay my Ningle can tickle it, when hee comes too't.

Min. Troth I shall neuer be enameld of a bare-headed man for this, what shift so euer I make.

Sir Vau. Then Mistris Miniuer S. Adams Prick-shaft must not hit you ; Peter take vp all the cloathes at the table and the Plums.

Enter Tucca and his boy.

Tuc. Saue thee my little worshipfull Harper ; how doe yee my little cracknels ? how doe ye ?

Sir Vau. Welcome M. Tucca, fit and shoote into your belly some Suger pellets.

Tuc. No, Godamercy Cadwallader, how doe you Horace ?

Ho. Thankes good Captaine.

Tu. Wher's the Sering thou carriest about thee ? O haue I found thee my scowring-sticke ; what's my name Bubo ?

Afni. Wod I were hang'd if I can call you any names but Captaine and Tucca.

Tuc. No Fye't ; my name's Hamlet reuenge ; thou hast been at Parris garden hast not ?

Hor. Yes Captaine, I ha plaide Zulziman there.

Sir Vau. Then M. Horace you plaide the part of an honest man.

Tuc. Death of Hercules, he could neuer play that part well in's life, no Fulkes you could not : thou call'st Demetrius Iorneyman Poet, but thou putst vp a Supplication to be a poore Iorneyman Player, and hadst beene still so, but that thou couldst not set a good face vpon't : thou hast forgot how thou amblest (in leather pilch) by a play-wagon, in the high way, and took'st mad Ieronimoes part, to get seruice among the Mimickes : and when the Stagerites banisht thee into the Ile of Dogs, thou turn'dst Ban-dog (villanous Guy) & euer since bitest therefore I aske if th'ast been at Parris-garden, because thou hast such a good mouth ; thou baitst well, read, *lege*, saue thy selfe and read.

Hor. Why Captaine these are *Epigrams* compos'd on you.

Tuc. Goe not out Farding Candle, goe not out, for trusty *Damboys* now the deed is done, Ile pledge this Epigram in wine, Ile swallow it, I, yes.

Sir Vau. God bleffe vs, will he be drunke with nittigrams now.

Tuc. So, now arise sprite ath Buttry; no Herring-bone Ile not pull thee out, but arise deere Eccho rise, rise deuill or Ile coniure thee vp.

Min. Good Master Tucca lets ha no coniuring heere.

Sir Vau. Vddes bloud you scald gouty Captaine, why come you to set encombrances heere betweene the Ladies.

Tuc. Be not so tart my precious Metheglin, be not (my old whore a Babilon, sit fast.)

Min. O Iesu if I know where abouts in London Babilon stands.

Tuc. Feede and be fat my faire Calipolis, stir not my beauteous wriggle-tailes, Ile disease none of you, Ile take none of you vp, but onely this table-man, I must enter him into some filthy sincke point, I must.

Hor. Captaine, you doe me wrong thus to disgrace me.

Tuc. Thou thinkst thou maist be as sawcy with me as my Buffe Ierkin, to sit vpon me, dost?

Ho. Dam me, if euer I traduc'd your name, What imputation can you charge me with?

Sir Vau. Sblud, I, what cōputations can you lay to his farge? answer, or by Sefu Ile canuas your coxcombe Tucky.

Min. If they draw sweet hearts, let vs shift for our selues.

Tuc. My noble swaggerer, I wil not fall out with thee, I cannot my mad Cumrade, finde in my heart to shed thy bloud.

Sir Vau. Cumrade? by Sefu call me Cumrade againe, and ile Cumrade ye about the sinnes and shoulders;

ownds, what come you to smell out heere? did you not dine and feede horribly well to day at dinner, but you come to munch heere, and giue vs winter-plummes? I pray depart, goe marfe, marfe, marfe out a doores.

Tuc. Adew Sir Eglamour, adew Lute-stringe, Curtin-rod, Goofe-quill; heere, giue that full-nof'd Skinker, these rimes; & harke Ile tagge my Codpeece point with thy legs, spout-pot Ile empty thee.

Asin. Dost threaten mee? Gods lid Ile binde thee to the good forbearing.

Sir Vau. Will you amble Hobby-horfe, will you trot and amble?

Tuc. Raw Artichocke I shall sauce thee. *Exit.*

Min. I pray you Master Tucca, will you fend me the five pound you borrowed on me; O you cannot heare now, but Ile make you heare me and feele me too in another place, to your shame I warrant you, thou shalt not conny-catch mee for five pounds; he tooke it vp Sir Vaughan in your name, hee swore you sent for it to Mum withall, twas five pound in gold, as white as my kercher.

Sir Vaughan. Ownds, five pound in my name to Mum about withall.

Min. I, to Mum withall, but hee playes mum-budget with me.

Sir Vau. Peter Salamander, tye vp your great and your little sword, by Sefu Ile goe sing him while tis hot. Ile beate five pound out of his leather pilch: Master Horace, let your wittes inhabite in your right places; if I fall fansomely vpon the Widdow, I haue some coffens Garman at Court, shall beget you the reuerfion of the Master of the Kings Reuels, or else be his Lord of Mis-rule nowe at Christmas: Come Ladyes, whorefson Stragling Captaine, Ile pound him. *Exeunt.*

Manet Horace and Asinius.

Hor. How now, what ail'st thou, that thou look'st so pale?

Asin. Nay, nothing, but I am afraide the Welsh

Knight has giuen me nothing but purging Comfits : this Capitaine stickes pockily in my stomack ; read this scroule, he saies they'r rimes, and bid me giue them you.

Hor. Rimes ? tis a challenge sent to you.

Afin. To me ?

Hor. He saies heere you divulg'd my Epigrams.

Afin. And for that dares he challenge me ?

Hor. You see he dares, but dare you answer him ?

Afin. I dare answer his challenge, by word of mouth, or by writing, but I scorne to meete him, I hope he and I are not Paralels.

Hor. Deere Bubo, thou shalt answere him ; our credites

Lye pawn'd vpon thy resolution,
Thy vallor must redeeme them ; charge thy spirits,
To waite more close, and neere thee : if he kill thee
Ile not suruiue ; into one Lottery
We'll cast our fates ; together liue and dye.

Afi. Content, I owe God a death, and if he will
make mee pay't against my will, Ile say tis hard dealing.
Exeunt.

*Enter Sir Adam, Tucca, with two pistols by his sides,
his boy laden with swords and bucklers.*

Tuc. Did Apolloes Freeze gowne watchman (boy,
dost heare Turkie-cockes taylor, haue an eye behinde,
least the enemie assault our Rere-ward) on proceede
Father Adam ; did that same tiranicall-tongu'd rag-a-
muffin Horace, turne bald-pates out so naked ?

Sir Ad. He did, and whipt them to with nettles,
that

The Widdow swore that a bare-headed man,
Should not man her : the Ladie Petula
Was there, heard all, and tolde me this.

Tuc. Goe too. Thy golde was accepted, it was,
and she shall bring thee into her Paradiſe, she shall
small Adam, she shall.

Sir Ada. But how ? but how Capten ?

Tuc. Thus, goe, couer a table with sweet meates, let all the Gentlewomen, and that same Pasquils-mad-cap (mother Bee there) nibble, bid them bite: they will come to gobble downe Plummies; then take vp that paire of Basket hiltes, with my commission, I meane Crispinus and Fannius; charge one of them to take vp the Bucklers, against that hayre-monger Horace, and haue a bout or two, in defence of baldepates: let them cracke euerie crowne that has haire on't: goe, let them lift vp baldenes to the skie, and thou shalt see, twill turne Miniuers heart quite against the haire.

Sir Ada. Excellent, why then M. Tucca——

Tuc. Nay, whir, nymble Prickshaft; whir, away, I goe vpon life and death, away, fie Scanderbag fie.

Exit.

Enter Asinius Bubo, and Horace aloofe.

Boy. Arme Captaine, arme, arme, arme, the foe is come downe.

Tucca offers to shoote.

Asi. Hold Capten Tucca holde, I am Bubo, & come to answer any thing you can lay to my charge.

Tuc. What, dost fummon a parlie my little Drumsticke? tis too late; thou seest my red flag is hung out, Ile fill thy guts with thine owne carrion carcas, and then eate them vp in steed of Sawfages.

Asi. Vse me how you will; I am resolute, for I ha made my Will.

Tuc. Wilt fight Turke-a-ten-pence? wilt fight then?

Asi. Thou shalt finde Ile fight in a Godly quarrell, if I be once fir'd.

Tuc. Thou shalt not want fire, Ile ha thee burnt when thou wilt, my colde Cornelius: but come: *Respice funem*; looke, thou seest; open thy selfe my little Cutlers Shoppe, I challenge thee thou slender Gentleman, at foure fundrie weapons.

Asi. Thy challenge was but at one, and Ile answere but one.

Boy. Thou shalt answer two, for thou shalt answer me and my Capten.

Tac. Well said Cockrell out-crowe him : art hardy noble Huon ! art Magnanimious ? licke-trencher ; looke, search least some lye in ambush ; for this man at Armes has paper in's bellie, or some friend in a corner, or else hee durst not bee so cranke.

Boy. Capten, Capten, Horace stands sneaking heere.

Tuc. I smelt the foule-fifted Morter-treader, come my most damnable fastidious rascall, I haue a fuite to both of you.

Ast. O holde, most pittifull Capitaine holde.

Hor. Holde Capten, tis knowne that Horace is valliant, & a man of the sword.

Tuc. A Gentleman or an honest Cittizen, shall not Sit in your pennie-bench Theaters, with his Squirrell by his side cracking nuttes ; nor sneake into a Tauerne with his Mermaid ; but he shall be Satyr'd, and Epigram'd vpon, and his humour must run vpo'th Stage : you'll ha *Euery Gentleman in's humour*, and *Euery Gentleman out on's humour* : wee that are heades of Legions and Bandes, and feare none but these same shoulder-clappers, shall feare you, you Serpentine rascall.

Hor. Honour'd Capten.

Tuc. Art not famous enough yet, my mad *Horastatus*, for killing a Player, but thou must eate men aliue ? thy friends ? Sirra wilde-man, thy Patrons ? thou Anthropophagite, thy Mecænasses ?

Hor. Capitaine, I'm forry that you lay this wrong. So close vnto your heart : deare Capitaine thinke I writ out of hot bloud, which (now) being colde, I could be pleas'd (to please you) to quaffe downe, The poyson'd Inke, in which I dipt your name.

Tuc. Saist thou so, my *Palinodicall* rimester ?

Hor. Henceforth Ile rather breath out *Solæcismes*. (To doe which Ide as soone speake blasphemie) Than with my tongue or pen to wound your worth,

Beleeue it noble Capten ; it to me
Shall be a Crowne, to crowne your actes with praize,
Out of your hate, your loue Ile stronglie raize.

Tuc. I know now th'ast a number of these *Quid-dits* to binde men to'th peace : tis thy fashion to flirt Inke in euerie mans face ; and then to craule into his bosome, and damne thy selfe to wip't off agen : yet to giue out abroad, that he was glad to come to composition with me : I know *Monsieur Machiauell* tis one a thy rules ; My long-heel'd *Troglodite*, I could make thine eares burne now, by dropping into them, all those hot oathes, to which, thy selfe gau't voluntarie fire, (when thou wast the man in the Moone) that thou wouldst neuer squib out any new Salt-peter Iestes against honest *Tucca*, nor those Maligo-tasters, his *Poetasters* ; I could *Cinocephalus*, but I will not, yet thou knowst thou hast broke those oathes in print, my excellent infernall.

Ho. Capten.

Tuc. Nay I smell what breath is to come from thee, thy answer is, that there's no faith to be helde with Heritickes & Infidels, and therefore thou swear'st anie thing : but come, lend mee thy hand, thou and I henceforth will bee *Alexander* and *Lodwicke*, the Gemini : sworne brothers, thou shalt be *Perithous* and *Tucca Thefeus* ; but Ile leaue thee 'tith lurch, when thou mak'st thy voiage into hell : till then, *Thine-assuredly*.

Hor. With all my foule deare Capten.

Tuc. Thou'lt shoote thy quilles at mee, when my terrible backe's turn'd for all this, wilt not Porcupine ? and bring me & my Heliconistes into thy Dialogues to make vs talke madlie, wut not *Lucian* ?

Hor. Capten, if I doe——

Tuc. Nay and thou dost, hornes of Lucifer, the *Parcell-Poets* shall Sue thy wrangling Muse, in the Court of *Pernaffus*, and neuer leaue hunting her, till she pleade in *Forma Pauperis* : but I hope th'ast more grace : come : friendes, clap handes tis a bargaine ;

amiable Bubo, thy fist must walke too : fo, I loue thee, now I see th'art a little Hercules, and wilt fight ; Ile Sticke thee now in my companie like a sprig of Rosemary.

Enter Sir Rees ap Vaughan and Peter Flash.

Fla. Draw Sir Rees he's yonder, shall I vpon him ?

Sir Vau. Vpon him ? goe too, goe too Peter Salamander ; holde, in Gods name holde ; I will kill him to his face, becaufe I meane he shall answer for it ; being an eye-witnes ; one vrde Capten Tucky.

Tuc. Ile giue thee ten thousand words and thou wilt, my little Thomas Thomasius.

Sir Vau. By Sefu, tis best you giue good vrdes too, least I beate out your tongue, and make your vrde nere to bee taken more ; doe you heare, fye-pounds, fye pounds Tucky.

Tuc. Thou shalt ha fye, and fye, and fye, and thou wantst money my Iob.

Sir Vau. Leauue your fetches and your fegaries, you tough leather-Ierkins ; leauue your quandaries, and trickes, and draw vpon me y' are best : you conny-catch Widdow *Miniuer-caps* for fye pounds, and say tis for me to cry Mum, and make mee run vp and downe in dishonors, and discredits ; is 't not true, you winke-a-pipes rascall ? is not true ?

Tuc. Right, true, guilty, I remember 't now ; for when I spake a good word to the Widdow for thee my young Sampson —

Sir Vau. For fye pounds you cheating scab, for 5. pounds, not for me.

Tuc. For thee ô Cæsar, for thee I tooke vp fye pounds in golde, that lay in her lap, & said Ide giue it thee as a token from her : I did it but to smell out how she stood affected to thee, to feele her ; I, and I know what she said, I know how I carried away the golde.

Sir Vau. By Sefu, I, ha not the mercy to fall vpon

him now: M. Tucky, did widdow Miniuers part quietly from her golde, because you lyed, and said it was for me?

Tuc. Quietly, in peace, without grumbling; made no noise. I know how I tempted her in thy behalfe, my little Trangdo.

Sir Vau. Capten Tucky, I will pay back her 5. £. (vnles you be damn'd in lyes) & hold you, I pray you pocket vp this; by the crosse a this sword & dagger, Capten you shall take it.

Tuc. Dost sweare by daggers? nay then Ile put vp more at thy hands then this.

Flash. Is the fray done sir?

Sir Vau. Done Peter, put vp your smeeter.

Tuc. Come hether, my soure-fac'd Poet; fling away that beard-brush Bubo, casheere him and harke: Knight attend: So, that raw-head and bloody-bones Sir Adam, has fee'd another brat (of those nine common wenches) to defend baldnes and to raile against haire: he 'll haue a fling at thee, my noble Cock-Sparrow.

Sir Vau. At mee? will hee fling the cudgels of his witte at mee?

Tuc. And at thy button-cap too; but come, Ile be your leader, you shall stand, heare all, and not be seene; cast off that blew coate, away with that flawne, and follow, come:

Exit.

Hor. Bubo, we follow Captaine.

Sir Vau. Peter, leaue comming behinde me, I pray any longer, for you and I must part Peter.

Flash. Sounds Sir, I hope you will not serue me so, to turne me away in this case.

Sir Vau. Turne you into a fooles coate; I meane I will go *solus*, or in solitaries alone; ounds y-are best giue better words, or Ile turne you away indeed; where is Capten Tucky? come Horace; get you home Peter.

Flash. Ile home to your cost, and I can get into the Wine-Seller.

Exit.

Hor. Remember where to meete mee.

Afn. Yes Ile meete; Tucca should ha found I dare meete. *Exit.*

Ho. Dare defend baldnes, which our conquering Muse

Has beaten downe so flat! Well, we will goe,
And see what weapons theyr weake wittes doe bring;
If sharpe, we'll spred a large and nobler wing;
Tucca, heere lyes thy Peace: warre roares agen;
My Swoord shall neuer cutte thee, but my pen. *Exit.*

Enter Sir Adam, Crispinus, Fannius, Blunt, Miniuer,
Petula, Philocalia and Dicace.

Ladies. Thanks good Sir Adam.

Sir Ada. Welcome red-cheekt Ladies,
And welcome comely Widdow; Gentlemen,
Now that our sorry banquet is put by,
From stealing more sweete kisses from your lips
Walke in my garden: Ladyes let your eyes
Shed life into these flowers by their bright beames,
Sit, Sit, heere's a large bower, heere all may heare,
Now good Crispinus let your praise begin.
There, where it left off Baldnes.

Crisf. I shall winne
No praise, by praising that, which to deprave,
All tongues are readie, and which none would haue.

Blu. To prooue that best, by strong and armed
reason,
Whose part reason feares to take, cannot but prooue,
Your wit's fine temper, and from these win loue.

Min. I promise you has almost conuerted me, I
pray bring forward your bald reasons M. Poet.

Cri. Mistris you giue my Reasons proper names,
For Arguments (like Children) should be like,
The subiect that begets them; I must striue,
To crowne *Bald heades*, therefore must baldlie thriue;
But be it as it can: To what before,
Went arm'd at table, this force bring I more,
If a *Bare head* (being like a dead-mans scull)

Should beare vp no praise els but this, it sets
Our end before our eyes ; should I dispaire,
From giuing *Baldnes* higher place then haire ?

Mini. Nay perdie, haire has the higher place.

Cri. The goodliest & most glorious strange-built
wonder,

Which that great Architect hath made, is heauen ;
For there he keepes his Court, It is his Kingdome,
That 's his best Master-piece ; yet tis the rooffe,
And Seeling of the world : that may be cal'd
The head or crowne of Earth, and yet that 's balde,
All creatures in it balde ; the louely *Sunne*,
Has a face sleeke as golde ; the full-cheekt *Moone*,
As bright and smoothe as siluer : nothing there
Weares dangling lockes, but sometime blazing Starres,
Whose flaming curlcs, set realmes on fire with warres.
Descend more low ; looke through mans fve-fold
fence,

Of all, the *Eye*, beares greateft eminence ;
And yet that 's balde, the haire that like a lace,
Are slicht vnto the liddes, borrow those formes,
Like Pent-houses to faue the eyes from stormes.

Sir Adam. Right, well said.

Cri. A head and face ore-growne with Shaggie
droffe,

O, tis an Orient pearle hid all in Mofse,
But when the head 's all naked and vncrown'd,
It is the worlds *Globe*, euen, smoothe and round ;
Baldnes is natures *But*, at which our life,
Shootes her last Arrow : what man euer lead
His age out with a staffe, but had a head
Bare and vncouer'd ? hee whose yeares doe rise,
To their full height, yet not balde, is not wise.
The *Head* is Wifedomes house, *Haire* but the thatch,
Haire ! It 's the basest stubble ; in scorne of it,
This Prouerbe sprung, *he has more haire then wit* :
Marke you not in derision how we call,

A head growne thicke with haire, *Bush-naturall* ?

Min. By your leaue (Master Poet) but that Bush-

naturall, is one a the trimmest, and most intanglingst beautie in a woman.

Cris. Right, but beleeeue this (*pardon me most faire*) You would haue much more wit, had you lesse haire : I could more wearie you to tell the proofes, (As they passe by) which fight on *Baldnes* side, Then were you taskt to number on a head, The haire : I know not how your thoughts are lead, On this strong Tower shall my opinion rest, *Heades thicke of haire are goode, but balde the best.*

Whilst this Paradox is in speaking, Tucca Enters with Sir Vaughan at one doore, and secretly placeth him : then Exit and brings in Horace muffled, placing him : Tucca sits among them.

Tuc. Th' art within a haire of it, my sweete *Wit* whether wilt thou ? my delicate Poeticall Furie, th' ast hit it to a haire.

Sir Vaughan steps out.

Sir Vau. By your fauour Master Tucky, his balde reasons are wide aboue two hayres, I beseees you pardon mee Ladies, that I thrust in so malepartly among you, for I did but mych heere, and see how this cruell Poet did handle bald heades.

Sir Ad. He gaue them but their due Sir Vaughan ; Widdow did he not ?

Mini. By my faith he made more of a balde head, than euer I shall be able : he gaue them their due truely.

Sir Vaugh. Nay vds bloud, their due is to bee a the right haire as I am, and that was not in his fingers to giue, but in God a Mighties : Well, I will hyre that humorous and fantastlicall Poet Master Horace, to breake your balde pate Sir Adam.

Sir Ada. Breake my balde pate ?

Tuc. Dost heare my worshipfull block-head ?

Sir Vaug. Patience Captaine Tucky, let me ab-
solue him ; I meane he shal pricke, pricke your head or

sconce a little with his goose-quils, for he shal make another Thalimum, or crosse-stickes, or some Polinod-dyes, with a few Nappy-grams in them that shall lift vp haire, and set it an end, with his learned and harty commendations.

Hor. This is excellent, all will come out now.

Dica. That same Horace me thinkes has the most vngodly face, by my Fan ; it lookes for all the world, like a rotten ruffet Apple, when tis bruiz'd : Its better then a spoonefull of Sinamon water next my heart, for me to heare him speake ; hee soundes it so i' th nose, and talkes and randes for all the world, like the poore fellow vnder Ludgate : oh fye vpon him.

Min. By my troth sweet Ladies, it's Cake and pudding to me, to see his face make faces, when hee reades his Songs and Sonnets.

Hor. Ile face some of you for this, when you shall not budge.

Tuc. Its the stinckingst dung-farmer—foh vpon him.

Sir Vau. Foh ? oundes you make him vrse than olde herring : foh ? by Sefu I thinke he's as tidy, and as tall a Poet as euer drew out a long verse.

Tuc. The best verse that euer I knew him hacke out, was his white necke-verse : noble Ap Rees thou wouldst scorne to laye thy lippes to his commendations, and thou smeldst him out as I doe, hee calles thee the burning Knight of the Salamander.

Sir Vaugh. Right, Peter is my Salamander ; what of him ? but Peter is neuer burnt : howe now ? so, goe too now.

Tucca. And sayes because thou Clipst the Kinges English.

Sir Vaughan. Oundes mee ? that's treason : clip ? horrible treasons, Sefu holde my handes ; clip ? hee baites moufe-trappes for my life.

Tucca. Right little *Twinckler*, right : hee sayes because thou speak'st no better, thou canst not keepe a good tongue in thy head.

Sir Targ. By God tis the best tongue, I can buy for love or money.

Tuc. He shotes at thee too Adam Bell, and his arrows stickes heere; he calles thee bald-pate.

Sir Targ. Oundes make him prooue these intollerable.

Tuc. And askes who shall carry the vineger-bottle? & then he rimes too't and sayes Prickshaft: nay Minster hee crumples thy Cap too; and —

Cri. Come Tacta, come, no more; the man's wel knowen, thou needst not paint him, whom does he not wrong?

Tuc. Mary himselfe, the vglie Pope Boniface, pardons himselfe, and therefore my iudgement is, that presently he bee had from hence to his place of execution, and there bee Stab'd, Stab'd, Stab'd.

He stabs at him.

Hor. Oh gentlemen, I am flaine, oh flauce art hyr'd to murder me, to murder me, to murder me!

Ladies. Oh God!

Sir Vaugh. Ounds Capten, you haue put all Poetrie to the dint of sword, blow winde about him: Ladies for our Lordes sake you that haue smocks, teare off peeces to shoote through his oundes: Is he dead and buried? is he? pull his nose, pinch, rub, rub, rub, rub.

Tu. If he be not dead, looke heere; I ha the Stab and pippin for him: if I had kil'd him, I could ha pleas'd the great foole with an Apple.

Cris. How now? be well good Horace, heer's no wound;

Y'are flaine by your owne seares; how dost thou man? Come, put thy heart into his place againe;

Thy out-side's neither peir'd, nor In-side flaine.

Sir Vau. I am glad M. Horace, to see you walking.

Ho. Gentlemen, I am blacke and blewe the breadth of a groate.

Tuc. Breadth of a groate? there's a teston, hide thy infirmities, my scuruy Lazarus; doe, hide it, least

it prooue a scab in time : hang thee desperation, hang thee, thou knowst I cannot be sharpe fet against thee : looke, feele (my light-vptailles all) feele my weapon.

Mi. O most pittifull as blunt as my great thumb.

Sir Vau. By Sefu, as blunt as a Welsh bag-pudding.

Tuc. As blunt as the top of Poules ; tis not like thy Aloe, Cicatrine tongue, bitter : no, tis no stabber, but like, thy goodly and glorious nose, blunt, blunt, blunt : dost roare bulchin ? dost roare ? th' ast a good rounciual voice to cry Lanthorne & Candle-light.

Sir Va. Two vrdls Horace about your eares : how chance it passēs, that you bid God boygh to an honest trade of building Symneys, and laying downe Bricks, for a worfe handicraftnes, to make nothing but railes ; your Muse leanes vpon nothing but filthy rotten railes, such as stand on Poules head, how chance ?

Hor. Sir Vaughan.

Sir Va. You lye fir varlet fir villaine, I am fir Salamanders, ounds, is my man Master Peter Salamanders face as vrse as mine ? Sentlemen, all and Ladies, and you say once or twice Amen, I will lap this little Silde, this Booby in his blankets agen.

Omnes. Agree'd, agree'd.

Tuc. A blanket, these crackt Venice glasses shall fill him out, they shall tosse him, holde fast wag-tailles : so, come, in, take this bandy with the racket of patience, why when ? dost stampe mad Tamberlaine, dost stampe ? thou thinkst th' ast Morter vnder thy feete, dost ?

Ladies. Come, a bandy ho.

Hor. O holde most sacred beauties.

Sir Vau. Hold, silence ; the puppet-teacher speakes.

Ho. Sir Vaughan, noble Capten, Gentlemen, Crispinus, deare Demetrius ô redeeme me, Out of this infamous — by God by Iesu —

Cri. Nay, sweare not so good Horace, now these

Ladies,

Are made your executioners : prepare,

To suffer like a gallant, not a coward ;
 Ile trie t' vnloose, their hands, impossible.
 Nay, womens vengeance are implacable.

Hor. Why, would you make me thus the ball of
 scorn ?

Tuc. Ile tell thee why, because th' ast entred
 Actions of assault and battery, against a companie of
 honourable and worshipfull Fathers of the law : you
 wrangling rascall, law is one of the pillars ath land,
 and if thou bee'st bound too't (as I hope thou shalt
 bee) thou't prooue a skip-Jacke, thou't be whipt. Ile
 tell thee why, because thy sputtering chappes yelp,
 that Arrogance, and Impudence, and Ignorance, are
 the essentiall parts of a Courtier.

Sir Vau. You remember Horace they will puncke,
 and pincke, and pompe you, and they catch you by
 the coxcombe : on I pray, one lash, a little more.

Tuc. Ile tell thee why, because thou cryest p'trooh
 at worshipfull Cittizens, and cal'st them Hat-caps,
 Cuckolds, and bankrupts, and modest and vertuous
 wiues punckes & cockatrices. Ile tell thee why,
 because th' ast arraigned two Poets against all lawe
 and conscience ; and not content with that, hast turn'd
 them amongst a company of horrible blacke Fryers.

Sir Vau. The same hand still, it is your owne
 another day, M. Horace, admonitions is good meate.

Tuc. Thou art the true arraign'd Poet, and should'st
 haue been hang'd, but for one of these part-takers,
 these charitable Copper-lac'd Christians, that fetcht
 thee out of Purgatory, (Players I meane) Theaterians
 pouch-mouth, Stage-walkers ; for this Poet, for this,
 thou must lye with these foure wenches, in that
 blancket, for this — —

Hor. What could I doe, out of a iust reuenge,
 But bring them to the Stage ? they enuy me
 because I holde more worthy company.

Deme. Good Horace, no ; my cheekes do blush
 for thine,

As often as thou speak'st so, where one true

And nobly-vertuous spirit, for thy best part
 Loues thee, I wish one ten, euen from my heart;
 I make account I put vp as deepe share
 In any good mans loue, which thy worth earne,
 As thou thy selfe; we enuy not to see,
 Thy friends with Bayes to crowne thy Poesie.
 No, heere the gall lyes, we that know what stuffe
 Thy verie heart is made of; know the stalke
 On which thy learning growes, and can giue life
 To thy (once dying) basenes; yet must we
 Dance Antickes on your Paper.

Hor. Fannius.

Cri. This makes vs angry, but not enuious,
 No; were thy warpt soule, put in a new molde,
 Ide weare thee as a Iewell set in golde.

Sir Vau. And Iewels Master Horace, must be
 hang'd you know.

Tuc. Good Pagans, well said, they haue sowed vp
 that broken seame-rent lye of thine, that Demetrius is
 out at Elbowes, and Crispinus is false out with Sattin
 heere, they haue; but bloate herring dost heere?

Hor. Yes honour'd Captaine, I haue eares at will.

Tuc. Ist not better be out at Elbowes, then to bee
 a bond-slaue, and to goe all in Parchment as thou
 dost?

Horace. Parchment Captaine? tis Perpetuana I
 assure you.

Tuc. My Perpetuall pantaloone true, but tis waxt
 ouer; th'art made out of Wax; thou must answere for
 this one day; thy Muse is a hagler, and weares
 cloathes vpon best-be-trust: th'art great in some bodies
 books for this, thou knowst where; thou wouldst bee
 out at Elbowes, and out at heeles too, but that thou
 layest about thee with a Bill for this, a Bill—

Ho. I confesse Capten, I followed this suite hard.

Tuc. I know thou didst, and therefore we haue
 Hiren heere, speake my little dish-washers, a verdit
 Pisse-kitchens.

Omnes. Blancket.

Sir Vau. Holde I pray, holde, by Sefu I haue put vpon my heade, a fine deuice, to make you laugh, tis not your fooles Cap Master Horace, which you couer'd your Poetasters in, but a fine tricke, ha, ha, is iumblin in my braine.

Tuc. Ile beate out thy braines, my whorson hanfome dwarfe, but ile haue it out of thee.

Omnes. What is it good Sir Vaughan?

Sir Vau. To conclude, tis after this manners, because Ma. Horace is ambition, and does conspire to bee more hye and tall as God a mightie made him, wee'll carry his terrible person to Court, and there before his Mafestie Dub, or what you call it, dip his Muse in some licour, and christen him, or dye him, into collours of a Poet.

Omnes. Excellent.

Tuc. Super Super-excellent Reuellers goe, proceede you Masters of Arte in kissing these wenches, and in daunces, bring you the quiuering Bride to Court, in a Maske, come Grumboll, thou shalt Mum with vs; come, dogge mee skneakes-bill.

Hor. O thou my Muse!

Sir Vau. Call vpon God a mighty, and no Muses, your Muse I warrant is otherwise occupied, there is no dealing with your Muse now, therefore I pray marfe, marfe, marfe, oundes your Moose? *Exeunt.*

Cri. We shal haue sport to see them; come bright beauties,

The Sunne stoops low, and whispers in our eares,
To hasten on our Maske, let's crowne this night,
With choise composed wreathes of sweet delight.

Exeunt.

Enter Terrill and Cælestine sadly, Sir Quintilian stirring and migling a cup of wine.

Ter. O Night, that Dyes the Firmament in blacke,
And like a cloth of cloudes doft stretch thy limbes;
Vpon the windy Tenters of the Ayre:

O thou that hang'st vpon the backe of Day,
Like a long mourning gowne : thou that art made
Without an eye, because thou shouldst not see
A Louers Reuels : nor participate
The Bride-groomes heauen ; ô heauen, to me a hell :
I haue a hell in heauen, a blessed curse ;
All other Bride-groomes long for Night, and taxe
The Day of lazie slouth ; call Time a Cripple,
And say the houres limpe after him : but I
With Night for euer banisht from the skie,
Or that the Day would neuer sleepe : or Time,
Were in a swoound ; and all his little Houres,
Could neuer lift him vp with their poore powers.

Enter Cælestine.

But backward runnes the course of my delight ;
The day hath turn'd his backe, and it is night :
This night will make vs odde ; day made vs euen,
All elfe and damb'd in hel, but I in heauen.

Cæ. Let loose thy oath, so shal we still be euen.

Ter. Then am I damb'd in hell, and not in
heauen.

Cæ. Must I then goe ? tis easie to say no,
Must is the King himselfe, and I must goe ;
Shall I then goe ? that word is thine ; I shall,
Is thy commaund : I goe because I shall ;
Will I then goe ? I aske my selfe ; ô ill,
King, saies I must : you, I shall ; I, I will.

Ter. Had I not sworne.

Cæ. Why didst thou sweare ?

Ter. The King

Sat heauy on my resolution,

Till (out of breath) it panted out an oath,

Cæ. An oath ? why, what's an oath ? tis but the
fmoake,

Of flame & bloud ; the blister of the spirit,
Which rizeth from the Steame of rage, the bubble

That shootes vp to the tongue, and scaldes the voice,
 (For oathes are burning words, thou swor'st but one,
 Tis frozen long agoe : if one be numbred,
 What Countrimen are they ? where doe they dwell,
 That speake naught else but oathes ?

Ter. They're men of hell.

An oath ? why tis the trafficke of the foule,
 Tis law within a man ; the seale of faith,
 The bond of euery conscience ; vnto whom,
 We fet our thoughts like hands : yea such a one
 I swore, and to the King : A King containes
 A thousand thousand ; when I swore to him,
 I swore to them ; the very haire that guard
 His head, will rise vp like sharpe witnesses
 Against my faith and loyalty : his eye .
 Would straight condemne me : argue oathes no more,
 My oath is high, for to the King I swore.

Enter Sir Quintilian with the cup.

Cæ. Must I betray my Chastity ? So long
 Cleane from the treason of rebelling lust ;
 O husband ! O my Father ! if poore I
 Must not liue chaste, then let me chastly dye.

S. qui. I, heer's a charme shall keep thee chaste,
 come, come,
 Olde Time hath left vs but an houre to play
 Our parts ; begin the Sceane, who shall speake first ?
 Oh, I, I play the King, and Kings speake first ;
 Daughter stand thou heere, thou Sonne Terrill there,
 O thou standst well, thou lean'st against a poast,
 (For thou't be posted off I warrant thee :)
 The King will hang a horne about thy necke,
 And make a poast of thee ; you stand well both,
 We neede no Prologue, the King entring first,
 He's a most gracious Prologue : mary then
 For the Catastrophe, or Epilogue,
 Ther's one in cloth of Siluer, which no doubt,

Will please the hearers well when he steps out ;
His mouth is fil'd with words : see where he stands ;
He'll make them clap their eyes besides their hands.
But to my part ; suppose who enters now,
A King, whose eyes are set in Siluer ; one
That blusfeth golde, speakes Musicke, dancing
walkes,

Now gathers neerer takes thee by the hand,
When straight thou thinkest, the very Orbe of heauen,
Mooues round about thy fingers, then he speakes,
Thus--thus—I know not how.

Cal. Nor I to answer him.

Sir Quint. No girle? knowst thou not how to answer him?

Why then the field is lost, and he rides home,
Like a great conquerour ; not answer him?
Out of thy part already? foylde the Sceane?
Disfrancht the lynes? disarm'd the action?

Ter. Yes, yes, true chastity is tongu'd so weake,
Tis ouer-come ere it know how to speake.

Sir qui. Come come, thou happy clofe of euery wrong,

Tis thou that canst dissolue the hardest doubt ;
Tis time for thee to speake, we are all out.
Daughter, and you the man whom I call Sonne,
I must confesse I made a deede of gift ;
To heauen and you and gaue my childe to both :
When on my blessing I did charme her soule,
In the white circle of true Chastity,
Still to run true, till death : now Sir if not,
She forfeys my rich blessing, and is Fin'd
With an eternall curse ; then I tell you,
She shall dye now, now whilst her soule is true.

Ter. Dye!

Cal. I, I am deaths eccho.

Sir quin. O my Sonne,
I am her Father ; euery teare I shed,
Is threescore ten yeere olde ; I weepe and smile
Two kinde of teares : I weepe that she must dye,

I smile that she must dye a Virgin : thus
 We ioyfull men mocke teares, and teares mocke vs.

Ter. What speakes that cup ?

Sir quin. White wine and poison.

Ter. Oh :

That very name of poison, poisons me ;
 Thou Winter of a man, thou walking graue,
 Whose life is like a dying Taper : how
 Canst thou define a Louers labouring thoughts ?
 What Sent hast thou but death ? what taste but earth ?
 The breath that purles from thee. is like the Steame
 Of a new-open'd vault : I know thy drift,
 Because thou art traueilling to the land of Graues,
 Thou couetest company, and hether bringst,
 A health of poison to pledge death : a poison
 For this sweete spring ; this Element is mine,
 This is the Ayre I breath ; corrupt it not ;
 This heauen is mine, I bought it with my foule,
 Of him that felles a heauen, to buy a foule.

Sir quin. Well, let her goe ; she's thine thou cal'st
 her thine,

Thy Element, the Ayre thou breath'st ; thou knowst
 The Ayre thou breath'st is common, make her so :
 Perhaps thou't say ; none but the King shall weare
 Thy night-gowne, she that laps thee warme with loue ;
 And that Kings are not common : Then to shew,
 By consequence he cannot make her so,
 Indeede she may promoote her shame and thine,
 And with your shames, speake a good word for mine :
 The King shining so cleare, and we so dim,
 Our darke disgraces will be seene through him.

Imagine her the cup of thy moist life,
 What man would pledge a King in his own wife ?

Ter. She dyes : that sentence poisons her : O life !
 What slaue would pledge a King in his owne wife ?

Cal. Welcome, O poyson, phisicke against lust,
 Thou holesome medicine to a constant bloud ;
 Thou rare Apothecary that canst keepe,
 My chastity preferu'd, within this boxe ;

Of tempting dust, this painted earthen pot,
That stands vpon the stall of the white soule,
To set the shop out like a flatterer ;
To draw the customers of Sinne : come, come,
Thou art no poison, but a dyet-drinke,
To moderate my bloud : White-innocent Wine,
Art thou made guilty of my death ? oh no,
For thou thy selfe art poison'd, take me hence,
For Innocence, shall murder Innocence. *Drinckes.*

Ter. Holde, holde, thou shalt not dye, my Bride,
my wife,

O stop that speedy messenger of death ;
O let him not run downe that narrow path,
Which leades vnto thy heart ; nor carry newes
To thy remoouing soule, that thou must dye.

Cal. Tis done already, the Spirituall Court,
Is breaking vp ; all Offices discharg'd,
My soule remooues from this weake standing house,
Of fraile mortality ; Deare Father, bleffe
Me now and euer : Dearer Man, farewell,
I ioyntly take my leaue of thee and life,
Goe, tell the King thou hast a constant wife.

Ter. I had a constant wife, Ile tell the King ;
Vntill the King—what dost thou smile ? art thou
A Father ?

Sir quin. Yea, smiles on my cheekes arise,
To see how sweetly a true virgin dyes.

Enter Blunt, Crispinus, Fannius, Philocalia, Dicache,
Petula, *lights before them.*

Cref. Sir Walter Terrill gallants are all ready,

Ter. All ready.

Dem. Well said, come, come, wher's the Bride ?

Ter. She's going to forbid the Banes agen.

She'll dye a maide : and see she keeps her oath.

All the men. Faire Cælestine !

Ladies. The Bride !

Ter. She that was faire,
Whom I cal'd faire and Cælestine.

Omnes. Dead !

Sir quin. Dead, she's deathes Bride, he hath her maidenhead.

Cri. Sir Walter Terrill.

Omnes. Tell vs how.

Ter. All cease,

The subiect that we treat of now is *Peace*.

If you demand how : I can tell : if why,

Aske the King that ; he was the cause, not I.

Let it suffice, she's dead, she kept her vow,

Aske the King why, and then Ile tell you how :

Nay giue your Reuels life, tho she be gone,

To Court with all your preparation ;

Leade on, and leade her on ; if any aske

The mistery, say death presents a maske,

Ring peales of Musicke, you are Louers belles,

The losse of one heauen, brings a thousand hels.

Exeunt.

Enter an arm'd Sewer, after him the seruice of a Banquet: the King at another doore meetes them, they Exeunt.

Kin. Why so, euen thus the Mercury of Heauen,
Vishers th' ambrosiate banquet of the Gods,
When a long traine of Angels in a ranke,
Serue the first course, and bow their Christall knees,
Before the Siluer table ; where Ioues page
Sweet Ganimed filles Nectar : when the Gods
Drinke healthes to Kings, they pledge them ; none
but Kings

Dare pledge the Gods, none but Gods drinke to
Kings.

Men of our house are we prepar'd ?

Enter Seruants.

Ser. My Leige,
All waite the prefence of the Bride.

Kin. The Bride ?
Yea, euery fenceles thing, which she beholdes,

Will looke on her agen, her eyes reflection,
Will make the walles all eyes, with her perfection :
Obferue me now, becaufe of Maskes and Reuels,
And many nuptiall ceremonies : Marke,
This I create the Prefence heere the State,
Our Kingdomes feate, shall fit in honours Pride,
Like pleasures Queene, there will I place the Bride :
Be gone, be speedy, let me fee it done. *Exeunt.*
A King in Loue, is Steward to himfelfe,
And neuer fcornes the office, my felfe buy,
All glances from the Market of her eye.

Soft Muficke, chaire is fet vnder a Canopie.

King. Sound Muficke, thou sweet fuitter to the ayre,
Now wooe the ayre agen, this is the houre,
Writ in the Calender of time, this houre,
Muficke shall spend, the next and next the Bride ;
Her tongue will read the Muficke-Lecture : Wat
I loue thee Wat, becaufe thou art not wife ;
Not deep-read in the volume of a man,
Thou neuer fawft a thought, poore foule thou thinkft,
The heart and tongue is cut out of one peece,
But th'art deceau'd, the world hath a false light,
Fooles thinke tis day, when wife men know tis night.

Enter Sir Quintilian.

Sir quint. My Leige they're come a maske of
gallants,

King. Now — the fpirit of Loue vthers my
bloud.

Sir quin. They come.
The Watch-word in a Maske is the bolde Drum.

*Enter Blunt, Crispinus, Demetrius, Philocalia, Petula,
Dicache, all maskt, two and two with lights like
maskers : Cæleſtine in a chaire.*

Ter. All pleasures guard my King, I heere present,
My oath vpon the knee of duety : knees
Are made for Kings, they are the ſubieſts Fees.

King. Wat Terrill, th'art ill fuited, ill made vp,

In Sable collours, like a night peece dyed,
 Com'st thou the Prologue of a Maske in blacke ;
 Thy body is ill shapt ; a Bride-groome too ?
 Looke how the day is drest in Siluer cloth,
 Laide round about with golden Sunne-beames : fo
 (As white as heauen) should a fresh Bride-groome goe.
 What ? Cælestine the Bride, in the same taske ?
 Nay then I see ther's mystery in this maske,
 Prethee resolute me Wat ?

Ter. My gracious Lord,
 That part is hers, she actes it ; onely I
 Present the Prologue, she the misterie.

Kin. Come Bride, the Sceane of blushing entred
 first,

Your cheekes are settled now, and past the worst ;
Vnmasks her.

A mystery ! oh none plaies heere but death,
 This is deaths motion, motionles ; speake you,
 Flatter no longer ; thou her Bride-groome ; thou
 Her Father speake,

Sir quint. Dead.

Ter. Dead.

Kin. How ?

Sir quin. Poyson'd.

King. And poyson'd ?

What villaine durst blaspheme her beauties, or
 Prophane the cleare religion of her eyes.

Ter. Now King I enter, now the Sceane is mine,
 My tongue is tipt with poison : know who speakes,
 And looke into my thoughts ; I blush not King,
 To call thee Tyrant : death hath set my face,
 And made my blood bolde : heare me spirits of men,
 And place your eares vpon your hearts ; the day
 (The fellow to this night) saw her and me,
 Shake hands together : for the booke of heauen,
 Made vs eternall friends : thus, *Man and Wife*,
 This man of men (the King) what are not kings ?
 Was my chiefe guest, my royall guest, his Grace
 Grac'd all the Table, and did well become

The vpper end, where fate my Bride : in brieve,
He tainted her chaste eares ; she yet vnknowne,
His breath was treason, tho his words were none.
Treason to her and me, he dar'd me then,
(Vnder the couert of a flattering smile,)
To bring her where she is not as she is,
Aliue for lust, not dead for Chastity :
The resolution of my soule, out-dar'd,
I swore and taxt my faith with a sad oath ;
Which I maintaine ; heere take her, she was mine,
When she was liuing, but now dead, she's thine.

Kin. Doe not confound me quite ; for mine owne
guilt,
Speakes more within me then thy tongue containes ;
Thy sorrow is my shame : yet heerein springs,
Ioy out of sorrow, boldnes out of shame ;
For I by this haue found, once in my life,
A faithfull subiect, thou a constant wife.

Cæl. A constant wife.

Kin. Am I confounded twice ?
Blasted with wonder.

Ter. O delude me not.
Thou art too true to liue agen, too faire
To be my Cælestine, too constant farre
To be a woman.

Cæl. Not to be thy wife,
But first I pleade my duetie, and salute
The world agen.

Sir quin. My King, my Sonne, know all,
I am an Actor in this misterie,
And beare the chiefeest part. The Father I,
Twas I that ministred to her chaste blood,
A true somniferous potion, which did steale
Her thoughts to sleepe, and flattered her with death :
I cal'd it a quick poison'd drug, to trie
The Bride-groomes loue, and the Brides constancie.
He in the passion of his loue did fight,
A combat with affection ; so did both,
She for the poison stroue, he for his oath :

Thus like a happie Father, I haue won,
A constant Daughter, and a louing Sonne.

Kin. Mirrour of Maidens, wonder of thy name,
I giue thee that art giuen, pure, chaste, the same
Heere Wat: I would not part (for the worlds pride)
So true a Bride-groome, and so chaste a Bride.

Cri. My Leige, to wed a Comicall euent,
To presupposed tragicke Argument:
Vouchsafe to exercise your eyes, and see
A humorous dreadfull Poet take degree.

Kin. Dreadfull in his proportion or his pen?

Crisf. In both, he calles himselfe the whip of
men.

Kin. If a cleare merrit stand vpon his praise,
Reach him a Poets Crowne (the honour'd Bayes)
But if he claime it, wanting right thereto,
(As many bastard Sonnes of Poesie doe)
Race downe his vsurpation to the ground.

True Poets are with Arte and Nature Crown'd.
But in what molde so ere this man bee cast,
We make him thine Crispinus, wit and iudgement,
Shine in thy numbers, and thy foule I know,
Will not goe arm'd in passion gainst thy foe:
Therefore be thou our selfe; whilst our selfe sit,
But as spectator of this Sceane of wit.

Cri. Thankes royall Lord, for these high honors
done,

To me vnworthie, my mindes brightest fires
Shall all consume themselues in purest flame,
On the Alter of your deare eternall name.

Kin. Not vnder vs, but next vs take thy Seate,
"Artes nourished by Kings make Kings more great,
Vse thy Authority.

Crisf. Demetrius.

Call in that *selfe-creating Horace*, bring
Him and his *shadow* foorth.

Dem. Both shall appeare,
"No black-eyed star must sticke in vertues Spheare.

Enter Sir Vaughan.

Sir Va. Ounds did you see him, I pray let all his Mafesties most excellent dogs, be set at liberties, and haue their freedoms to smell him out.

Dem. Smell whom?

Sir Vaugh. Whom? the *Compofer*, the *Prince of Poets*, *Horace*, *Horace*, he's departed: in Gods name and the Kinges IARGE you to ring it out from all our eares, for Horaces bodie is departed: Master hue and crie shall—God bleffe King Williams, I crie you mercy and aske forgiuenes, for mine eyes did not finde in their hearts to looke vppon your Mafestie.

Kin. What news with thee Sir Vaughan?

Sir Vau. Newes? God tis as vrse newes as I can desire to bring about mee: our vnhanfome-fac'd Poet does play at bo-peepes with your Grace, and cries all-hidde as boyes doe.

Officers. Stand by, roome there, backe, roome for the Poet.

Sir Va. He's reprehended and taken, by Sefu, I reioyce very neere as much as if I had discouer'd a New-found Land, or the North and East Indies.

Enter Tucça, his boy after him with two pictures vnder his cloake, and a wreath of nettles: Horace and Bubo pul'd in by th' hornes bound both like Satyres, Sir Adam following, Mistris Miniuer with him, wearing Tucçaes chaine.

Tuc. So, tug, tug, pull the mad Bull in by th' hornes; So, baite one at that stake my place-mouth yelpers, and one at that stake Gurnets-head.

King. What busie fellow's this?

Tuc. Saue thee, my most gracious King a Harts saue thee, all hats and caps are thine, and therefore I vaile: for but to thee great *Sultane Soliman*, I

scorne to be thus put off or to deliuer vp this sconce
I wud.

Kin. Sir Vaughan, what's this iolly Capitaines
name?

Sir Va. Has a very sufficient name, and is a
man has done God and his Country as good and
as hot Seruice (in conquering this vile Monster-Poet)
as euer did S. George his horse-backe about the
Dragon.

Tuc. I sweate for't, but Tawsoone, holde thy
tongue Mon du, if thou't praise mee, doo't behinde
my backe: I am my weighty Soueraigne one of thy
graines, thy valliant vassaile; aske not what I am,
but read, turne ouer, vnclafpe thy Chronicles: there
thou shalt finde Buffe-Ierkin; there read my points of
war; I am one a thy Mandilian-Leaders; one that
enters into thy royall bands for thee; *Pantilius Tucce*;
one of thy Kingdomes chiefeft quarrellers; one a thy
most faithfull—fy—fy—fy—

Sir Vau. Drunkerds I holde my life.

Tuc. No *whirligig*, one of his faithfull fighters; thy
drawer & royall *Tamor Cham*.

Sir Vau. Goe too, I pray Capitaine Tucce, giue
vs all leaue to doe our busines before the King.

Tuc. With all my heart, shi, shi, shi shake that
Beare-whelp when thou wut.

Sir Vau. Horace and Bubo, pray fend an an-
swere into his Mafesties eares, why you goe thus in
Ouids Morter-Morphesis and strange fashions of ap-
parell.

Tuc. Cur why?

Afini. My Lords, I was drawne into this beastly
suite by head and shoulders onely for loue I bare to
my Ningle.

Tuc. Speake Ningle, thy mouth's next, belch out,
belch, why—

Hor. I did it to retyre me from the world;
And turne my *Muse* into a *Timonist*,
Loathing the general Leprozie of Sinne,

Which like a plague runs through the foules of men :
I did it but to ———

Tu. But to bite euery Motley-head vice by'th nose,
you did it Ningle to play the Bug-bear Satyre, &
make a Campe royall of fashion-mongers quake at
your paper Bullets ; you Naffie Tortois, you and your
Itchy Poetry breake out like Christmas, but once a
yeare, and then you keepe a Reuelling, & Araigning
& a Scratching of mens faces, as tho you were
Tyber the long-tail'd Prince of Rattes, doe you ?

Cri. Horace.

Sir Vaughan. Silence, pray let all vrdes be strangled,
or held fast betweene your teeth

Cri. Vnder controule of my dreade Soueraigne,
We are thy Iudges ; thou that didst Arraigne,
Art now prepar'd for condemnation ;
Should I but bid thy *Muse stand to the Barre*,
Thy selfe against her wouldst giue euidence :
For flat rebellion gainst the Sacred lawes
Of diuine Poesie : heerein most she mist,
Thy pride and scorne made her turne Saterist,
And not her loue to vertue (as thou Preachest)
Or should we minister strong pilles to thee :
What lumpes of hard and indigested stufte,
Of bitter *Satirisme*, of *Arrogance*,
Of *Selfe-loue*, of *Detraction*, of a blacke
And stinking *Insolence* should we fetch vp ?
But none of these, we giue thee what's more fit,
With stinging nettles Crowne his stinging wit

Tuc. Wel said my Poeticall huckster, now he's in
thy handling rate him, doe rate him well.

Hor. O I beseech your Maiesty, rather then thus
to be netled, Ile ha my Satyres coate pull'd ouer mine
cares, and be turn'd out a the nine Muses Seruice.

Asin. And I too, let mee be put to my shifts with
myne Ningle.

Sir Vau. By Sefu so you shall M. Bubo ; flea off
this hairie skin M. Horace, so, so, so, vntrusse, vn-
trusse.

Tuc. His Poeticall wreath my dapper puncke-fetcher.

Hor. Ooh——

Sir Va. Nay, your oohs, nor your *Callin-oes* cannot serue your turne ; your tongue you know is full of blisters with rayling, your face full of pockey-holes and pimples, with your fierie inuentions : and therefore to preferue your head from aking, this Biggin is yours, —— nay by Sefu you shall bee a Poet, though not Lawrefyed, yet Nettlefyed, so :

Tuc. Sirra stincker, thou'rt but vntruff'd now, I owe thee a whipping still, and Ile pay it : I haue layde rodde in Pisse and Vineger for thee : It shall not bee the *Whipping a' th Satyre*, nor the Whipping of the blinde-Bear, but of a counterfeite Iugler, that steales the name of Horace.

Kin. How? counterfeite? does hee vsurpe that name?

Sir Vau. Yes indeede ant please your Grace, he does sup vp that abhominable name.

Tuc. Hee does O King *Cambises*, hee does : thou hast no part of Horace in thee but's name, and his damnable vices : thou hast such a terrible mouth, that thy beard's afraide to peepe out : but, looke heere you staring Leuiathan, heere's the sweete visage of Horace ; looke perboyld-face, looke ; Horace had a trim long-beard, and a reasonabable good face for a Poet, (as faces goe now-a-dayes) Horace did not skruie and wriggle himselfe into great Mens famyliarity, (impudentlie) as thou doost : nor weare the Badge of Gentlemens company, as thou doost thy Taffetie sleeues tackt too onely with some pointes of profit : No, Horace had not his face punctht full of Oylet-holes, like the couer of a warming-pan : Horace lou'd Poets well, and gaue Coxcombes to none but fooles ; but thou lou'st none, neither Wifemen nor fooles, but thy selfe : Horace was a goodly Corpulent Gentleman, and not so leane a hollow-cheekt Scrag as thou art : No, heere's the Coppy of thy countenance, by this will I learne to

make a number of villanous faces more, and to looke scuriously vpon'th world, as thou dost.

Cri. Sir Vaughan will you minister their oath ?

Sir Vau. Master Asinius Dubo, you shall sweare as little as you can, one oath shall damme vp your Innocent mouth.

Afin. Any oath Sir, Ile sweare any thing.

Sir Va. You shall sweare by *Phæbus* (who is your Poets good Lord and Master,) that heere-after you will not hyre Horace, to giue you poesies for rings, or hand-kerchers, or kniues which you vnderstand not, nor to write your Loue-letters ; which you (in turning of a hand) set your markes vpon, as your owne : nor you shall not carry Lattin Poets about you, till you can write and read English at most ; and lastlye that you shall not call Horace your Ningle.

Afin. By *Phæbus* I sweare all this, and as many oathes as you will, so I may trudge.

Sir Vau. Trudge then, pay your legs for Fees, and bee dissarg'd.

Tuc. Tprooth . . runne Red-cap, ware hornes there. *Exit Afin.*

Sir Va. Now Master Horace, you must be a more horrible swearer, for your oath must be (like your wittes) of many collours ; and like a Brokers booke of many parcels.

Tuc. Read, read ; th'inuentory of his oath.

Hor. Ile sweare till my haire stands vp an end, to bee rid of this sting, oh this sting.

Sir Vau. Tis not your sting of conscience, is it ?

Tuc. Vpon him : *Inprimis.*

Sir Vaugh. *Inprimis*, you shall sweare by *Phæbus* and the halfe a score Muses lacking one : not to sweare to hang your selfe, if you thought any Man, Ooman or Silde, could write Playes and Rimes, as well-fauour'd ones as your selfe.

Tuc. Well sayd, hast brought him toth gallowes already ?

Sir Vaugh. You shall sweare not to bumbast out a

new Play, with the olde lynings of Ieſtes, ſtolen from the Temples Reuels.

Thc. To him olde Tango.

Sir Va. Moreouer, you ſhall not ſit in a Gallery, when your Comedies and Enterludes haue entred their Actions, and there make vile and bad faces at euerie lynce. to make Sentlemen haue an eye to you, and to make Players afraide to take your part.

Thc. Thou ſhalt be my Ningle for this.

Sir Va. Beſides, you muſt forweare to venter on the ſtage, when your Play is ended, and to exchange curteſies, and complements with Gallants in the Lordes roomes, to make all the houſe riſe vp in Armes, and to cry that's Horace, that's he, that's he, that's he, that pennes and purges Humours and diſeaſes.

Thc. There boy, agen.

Sir Va. Secondly, when you bid all your friends to the marriage of a poore couple, that is to ſay : your *Wits and neceſſities, alias diſtus, to the riſing of your Muſic: alias, your Muſes ſp-fitting: alias a Poet Whitſon-Aie*; you ſhall ſweare that within three dayes after, you ſhall not abroad, in Booke-binders ſhops, brag that your *Viſe-royes* or *Tributorie-Kings*, haue done homage to you, or paide quarterage.

Thc. Ile buſſe thy head Holofernes.

Sir Va. Moreouer and *Inprimis*, when a Knight or Sentlemen of vrſhip, does giue you his paſſe-port, to trauaile in and out to his Company, and giues you money for Gods ſake; I truſt in Seſu, you will ſweare (tooth and nayle) not to make ſcalde and wry-mouth Ieſtes vpon his Knight-hood, will you not?

Her. I neuer did it by Parnaſſus.

Thc. Wut ſweare by Parnaſſus and lye too, Doctor Doddipol!

Sir Va. Thirdly, and laſt of all ſauing one, when your Playes are miſſe-likt at Court, you ſhall not crye Mew like a Puſſe-cat, and ſay you are glad you write out of the Courtiers Element.

Thc. Let the Element alone, tis out a thy reach.

Sir Vau. In brieflynes, when you Sup in Tauernes, amongst your betters, you shall sweare not to dippe your Manners in too much sawce, nor at Table to fling Epigrams, Embleames, or Play-speeches about you (lyke Hayle-stones) to keepe you out of the terrible daunger of the Shot, vpon payne to sit at the vpper ende of the Table, a'th left hand of Carlo Buffon : sweare all this, by Apollo and the eight or nine Muses.

Hor. By Apollo, Helicon, the Muses (who march three and three in a rancke) and by all that belongs to Pernaſſus, I sweare all this.

Tuc. Beare witnes.

Crif. That fearefull wreath, this honour is your due,

All Poets shall be Poet-Apes but you ;

Thanks (*Learnings true Mecænas, Poesies king*)

Thanks for that gracious eare, which you haue lent,
To this most tedious, most rude argument.

Kin. Our spirits haue well been feasted ; he whose pen

Draws both corrupt, and cleare bloud from all men :
(Careles what veine he prickes) let him not raue,
When his owne sides are strucke, blowes, blowes, doe craue.

Tuc. Kings-truce, my noble Hearbe-a-grace ; my Princely sweet-William, a boone—Stay first, Ist a match or no match, Lady Furniuall Ist ?

Sir Ad. & Sir quint. A match ?

Mini. I, a match, since he hath hit the Mistris so often i'th fore-game, we'll eene play out a rubbers.

Sir Ada. Take her for me.

Sir quin. Take her for thy selfe, not for me.

Sir Vau. Play out your rubbers in Gods name, by Sefu Ile neuer boule more in your Alley, Iddow.

Sir Quin. My Chaîne.

Sir Adam. My Purfe.

Tuc. Ile Chaîne thee presently, and giue thee ten pound and a purfe : a boone my Leige : . . . daunce

ô my delicate Rufus, at my wedding with this reuerend
Antiquary; ist done? wut thou?

Kin. Ile giue thee Kingly honour: *Night* and
Sleepe,

With filken Ribands would tye vp our eyes,
But Mistris Bride, one measure shall be led,
In scorne of Mid-nights hast, and then to bed.

Excunt.





EPILOGUS.

Tucca. G Entlemen, Gallants, and you my little Swaggerers that fight lowe: my tough hearts of Oake that stand too't so valliantly, and are still within a yard of your Capten: Now the Trumpets (that set men together by the eares) haue left their Tantara-rag-boy, let's part friends. I recant, beare witnes all you Gentle-folkes (that walke i'th Galleries) I recant the opinions which I helde of Courtiers, Ladies, & Cittizens, when once (in an assembly of Friers) I railde vpon them: that Hereticall Libertine Horace, taught me so to mouth it. Besides, twas when stiffe Tucca was a boy: twas not Tucca that railde and roar'd then, but the Deuill & his Angels: But now, Kings-truce, the Capten Summons a parlee, and deliuers himfelfe and his prating company into your hands, vpon what composition you wil. Are you pleas'd? and Ile dance Friskin for ioy, but if you be not, by'th Lord Ile see you all — heere for your two pence a peice agen, before Ile loose your company. I know now some be come hyther with cheekes swolne as big with hisses, as if they had the toot-ach: vds-foote, if I stood by them, Ide bee so bold as — intreate them to hisse in another place. Are you aduiz'd what you doe when you hisse? you blowe away

Horace's reuenge: but if you fet your hands and
 Seales to this, Horace will write against it, and
 you may haue more sport: he shall not loose his
 labour, he shall not turne his blanke verses into
 wast paper: No, my Poetafters will not laugh
 at him, but will vnruffe him agen, and agen,
 and agen. He tell you what you shall doe,
 cast your little Tuoca into a Bell: doe, make
 a Bell of me, and be al you my clappers, vpon
 condition, wee may haue a lustie peale, this
 colde weather: I haue but two legs left me,
 and they are both yours: Good night
 my two penny Tenants
 Good night.

FINIS



THE
MAGNIFICENT

Entertainment :

Giuen to King *James*, Queene *Anne* his wife,
and *Henry Frederick* the Prince, vpon the day
of his Maiesties Tryumphant Passage (from
the Tower) through his Honourable Citie
(and Chamber) of *London*, being the
15. of March. 1603.

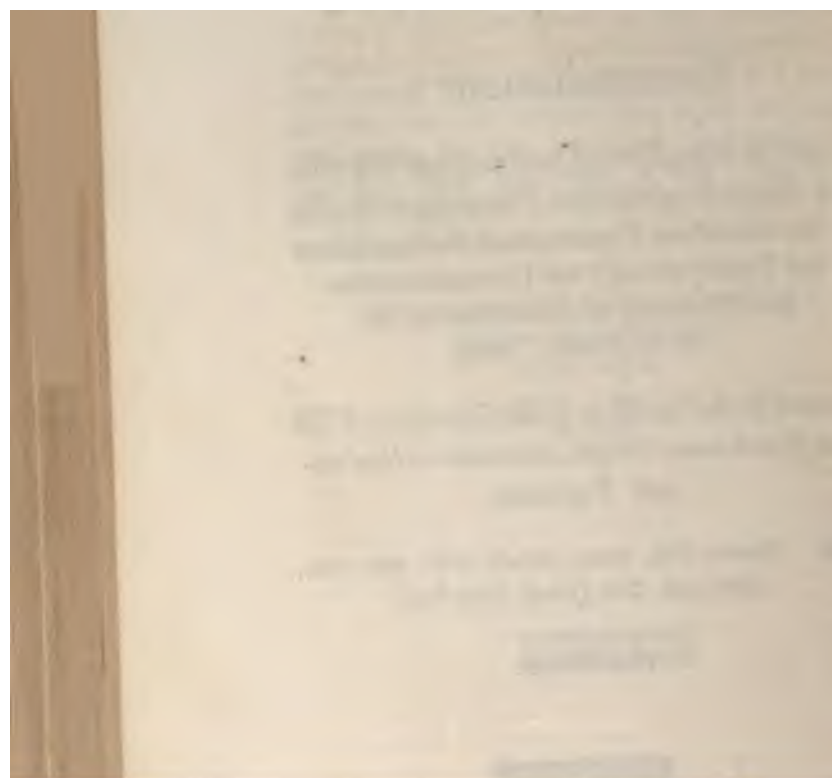
*As well by the English as by the Strangers: With
the speeches and Songes, deliuered in the seue-
rall Pageants.*

*Mart. Templa Deis, mores populis dedit, otia ferro,
Astra suis, Cælo sydera, ferta Ioui.*

Tho. Dekker.



Imprinted at London by T. C. for Tho. Man
the yonger. 1604.





☞ A D E V I C E

(proiected downe, but till now not
publisht,) *that should haue serued*
at his Maiesties first acesse to
the Cittie.

THe sorrow and amazement, that like an earthquake began to shake the distempered body of this Ilād (by reason of our late Soueraigns departure,) being wisely and miraculously preuented, and the feared wounds of a ciuill sword, (as *Alexanders* fury was with Musicke) being slopt from burling forth, by the found of Trompets that proclaimed King *James*: All mens eyes were presently turnd to the North, standing euen stone stil in their Circles, like the poynts of so many Geometricall needles, through a fixed & Adamantine desire to behold this 45. yeares wonder now brought forth by *Tyme*: their tongues neglecting all language else, saue that which spake zealous prayers, and vnceasable wishes, for his most speedy and longd-for arriuall. Inasmuch that the Night was thought vnworthy to be crownd with sleepe, and the day not fit to be lookt vpon by the Sunne, which brought not some fresh tydings of his Maiesties more neare and neerer approach.

At the length *Expectation* (who is euer waking) and

270 *The Kings Entertainment*

that so long was great, grewe neare the time of her delivry, *Rumor* comming all in a sweate to play the Midwife, whose first comfortable words were, that this *Treasure* of a Kingdome (a Man Ruler) hid so many yeares from vs, was now brought to light, and at hand.

Martiall. *Et populi vox erat yna, Venit.*

And that he was to be conducted through some vtter part of this his Citie, to his royall Castle the *Tower*, that in the age of a man (till this very minute) had not bene acquainted nor borne the name of a Kings Court. Which Entrance of his (in this maner) being fam'de abroad, Because his louing Subiects the Citizens would giue a taste of their dutie and affection: The *Deuice* following was fuddeinly made vp, as the first seruice, to a more royall and serious ensuing Entertainment; And this (as it was then purposed) should haue bene performed about the Barres beyond Bishope-gate.



The Denice.

Saint George, Saint Andrew, (the Patrons of both Kingdomes) hauing along time lookt vpon each other, with countenances rather of meere strangers, then of such neare Neighbours, vpon the present aspect of his *Maieslies* approach toward London, were (in his sight) to issue from two seuerall places on horse-backe, and in compleate Armour, their Brestes and Caparisons suited with the Armes of England and Scotland, (as they are now quartered) to testifie their leagued Combination, and newe sworne Brother-hood. These two armed Knights, encountring one another on the way, were to ride hand in hand, till they met his *Maieslie*. But the strangeness of this newly-begotten amitie, flying ouer the earth, It calles vp the *Genius* of the Cittie, who (not so much mazde, as wondring at the Noueltie) Intersepts their Passage.

And most aptly (in our Iudgement) might this *Domeslicum Numen* (the *Genius* of the place) lay iust clayme to this preheminnence of first bestowing Salutations and welcomes on his *Maieslie*, *Genius* being held (*Inter filios Deos*), to be God of Hospitalitye and Pleasure : and none but such a one was meet to receiue so excellent and princely a Guest.

Or if not worthy, for those two former respects : Yet being *Deus Generationis*, and hauing a power af-well ouer Countries, hearbs and trees, as ouer men, and the Cittie hauing now put on a *Regeneration*, or new birth ; the induction of such a Person, might (without a Warrant from the court of *Critijls*) passe very currant.

To made a false florish here with the borrowed weapons of all the old Maisters of the noble Science of Poesie, and to keepe a tyrannicall coyle, in Anatomizing *Genius*, from head to foote, (only to shew how nimble we can carue vp the whole messe of the Poets) were to play the Executioner, and to lay our Cities household God on the rack, to make him confesse, how

many paire of Latin sheets, we haue shaken & cut into shreds to make him a garment. Such feates of Actiuitie are stale, and common among Schoollers, before whome it is protested we come not now (in a Pageant) to Play a Maisters prize) For *Nunc ego rendosa Plenis suffragia renor.*

The multitude is now to be our Audience, whose heads would miserably runne a wooll-gathering, if we doo but offer to breake them with hard words. But suppose (by the way) contrary to the opinion of all the Doctors) that our *Genius* (in regarde the place is *Feminine*, and the person it selfe, drawne *Figura Humana, sed Ambiguo sexu*) should at this time be thrust into womans apparrell. It is no Schisme: be it so: our *Genius* is then a female, Antique; and reuerend both in yeares and habit: a Chaplet of mingled flowres, Inter wouen with branches of the Plane Tree (crowning her Temples: her haire long and white: her Vesture a loose roabe, Changeable and powdred with Starres: And being (on horsebacke likewise) thus furnished, this was the tune of her voyce.



Genius Locj.

*S*ay : wee coniure you, by that Potent Name,
Of which each Letter's (now) a triple charme :
Stay ; and deliuer vs, of whence you are,
And why you beare (alone) th'ostent of Warre,
When all hands else reare Oliue-boughs and Palme :
And Halcyonean dayes assure all's calme.
When euery tongue speakes Musick : when each Pen
(Dud and dyde blacke in Galle) is white agen,
And dipt in Nectar, which by Delphick fire
Being heated, melts into an Orphean-quire.
When Troyes proud buildings shew like Fairie-bowers,
And Streets (like Gardens) are perfum'd with Flowers :
And Windowes glazde onely with wondring eyes ;
(In a Kings looke such admiration lyes !)
And when soft handed Peace, so sweetly thriues,
That Bees in Souldiers Helmets build their Hiues :
When Ioy a tip-toe stands on Fortunes Wheele,
In silken Robes : How dare you shine in Steele ?

274 *The Kings Entertainment*

Saint George.

Ladie, What are you that fo question vs ?

Genius.

I *Am the places Genius, whence now springs
A Vine, whose yongest Braunch shall produce Kings:
This little world of men; this precious Stone,
That sets out Europe: this (the glasse alone,)
Where the neat Sunne each Morne himselfe attires,
And gildes it with his repercussive fires.
This Jewell of the Land; Englands right Eye:
Altar of Loue; and Spheare of Maiestie:
Greene Neptunes Minion, bou't whose Virgin-waile,
Isis is like a Cristall girdle cast.
Of this are we the Genius; here haue I,
Slept (by the fauour of a Deity)
Fortie-foure Summers and as many Springs,
Not frighted with the threats of forraine Kings.
But held vp in that gowned State I haue,
By twice Twelue-Fathers politique and graue:
Who with a sheathed Sword, and silken Law,
Do keepe (within weake Walles) Millions in awe.*

*I charge you therefore say, for what you come ?
What are you ?*

Both. Knights at Armes.

S. George. Saint George.

Saint Andrew. Saint Andrew.

For Scotlands honour I.

S. George. For Englands I

Both sworne into a League of Vnitie.

Genius.

I *Clap my hands for Ioy, and seate you both
Next to my heart: In leaues of purest golde,
This most auspicious loue shall be enrold.
Be ioynde to vs: And as to earth we bowe,*

through the City of London. 275

*So, to those royall feet, bende your steelde brow.
In name of all these Senators, (on whom
Vertue builds more, then these of Antique Rome)
Shouting a cheerefull welcome: Since no clyme,
Nor Age that has gon o're the head of Time,
Did e're cast vp such Ioyes, nor the like Summe
(But here) shall stand in the world, yeares to come,
Dread King, our hearts make good, what words do want,
To bid thee boldly enter Troynouant.*

Rerum certa salus, Terrarum gloria Cæsar ! Mart.
Sospite quo, magnos credimus esse Deos :
Diluxere prius pueri, Iuvenesque senesque, Idem.
At Nunc Infantes te quoque Cæsar amanti.

This should haue beene the first Offring of the Citties
Loue : But his *Maieftie* not making his *Entrance* (ac-
cording to expectation) It was (not vtterly throwne
from the Alter) but layd by.



The Kings Entertainment

Mart. Iam Crescunt media Pagmata celsa via.

BY this time Imagine, that *Poets* (who draw speaking Pictures) and *Painters* (who make dumbe Poesie) had their heads & hands full; the one for natue and sweet Inuention: the other for liuely Illustration of what the former should deuise: Both of them emulouly contending (but not struiuing) with the propest and brightest Colours of Wit and Art, to set out the beautie of the great *Triumphant day*.

For more exact and formall managing of which Businesse, a Select number both of Aldermen and Commoners (like so many Romane *Ædiles*) were (*Communi Consilio*) chosen forth, to whose discretion, the Charge, *Contriuings*, *Proiects*, and all other *Dependences*, owing to so troublesome a worke, was intirely, and Iudicially committed.

Many dayes were thriftily confumed, to molde the bodies of these Tryumphes comely, and to the honour of the Place: & at last, the stuffe whereof to frame them, was beaten out. The Soule that should giue life, & a tongue to this *Entertainment*, being to breathe out of Writers Pens. The Limmes of it to lye at the hard-handed mercy of Mychanitiens.

In a moment therefore of Time, are Carpenters, Ioyners, Caruers, and other Artificers sweating at their Chizzells.

Vir. Accingunt Omnes operi.

Not a finger but had an Office: He was held vn worthy euer after to *sucke the Hony dew of Peace*, that (*against his coming, by whom our Peace wears a triple Wreath*) would offer to play the Droane. The Streets are surueyed; heighthes, breadths, and distances taken, as it were to make *Fortifications*, for the *Solemnities*. Seauen pieces of ground, (like so many fieldes for a battaile) are plotted forth, vppon which these

through the City of London. 277

Arches of Tryumph must shew themfelues in their glorie : aloft, in the ende doe they aduance their proude fore-heads.

*Virg:—Circum pueri, Innuptæque Puella,
Sacra Canunt, funemq; manu contingere gaudent.*

Euen childrē (might they haue bin suffred) would gladly haue spent their little strength, about the *Engines*, that mounted vp the Frames : Such a fire of loue and ioy, was kindled in euery brest.

The day (for whose sake, these wonders of Wood, clymde thus into the clowdes) is now come ; being so carely vp by reason of Artificiall Lights, which wakened it, that the Sunne ouer slept himselfe, and rose not in many houres after, yet bringing with it into the very bosome of the Cittie, a world of people. The Streets seemde to bee paued with men : Stalles in stead of rich wares were set out with children, open Cafements fild vp with women.

All Glasse windowes taken downe, but in their places, sparkeled so many eyes, that had it not bene the day, the light which reflected from them, was sufficient to haue made one: hee that should haue compared the emptie and vntroden walkes of *London*, which were to be seen in that late mortally-destroying Deluge, with the thronged streetes now, might haue believed, that vpon this day, began a new *Creation*, & that the Citie was the onely Workhouse wherein fundry Nations were made.

A goodly and ciuil order was obserued, in Martialling all the Companies according to their degrees : The first beginning at the vpper end of Saint *Marks* Lane, and the last reaching aboue the Conduit in *Fleetstreete* : their Seats, being double-railde : vpon the vpper part wheron they leaned, the Streamers, Ensignes, and Bannerets, of each particular Company decently fixed : And directly against them, (euen quite through the body of the Citie, so hie as to

278 *The Kings Entertainment*

Temple-Barre) a single Raile (in faire distance from the other) was likewise erected to put off the multitude. Amongst whose tongues (which in such Conforts neuer lye still,) tho there were no Musicke, yet as the Poet sayes :

Mart. Vox diuersa sonat, populorum est vox tamen una.

Nothing that they speake could bee made any thing, yet all that was spoken, founded to this purpose, that still his Maiestie was comming. They haue their longings : And behold, A farre off they spie him, richly mounted on a white Iennet, vnder a rich Canopy, sustained by eight Barons of the *Cinqueports* ; the Tower seruing that morning but for his with-drawing Chamber, wherein hee made him ready : and from thence stept presently into his Citie of *London*, which for the time might worthily borrow the name of his *Court Royall* : His passage alongst that Court, offering it selfe for more State) through seuen Gates, of which the first was erected at *Fanchurch*.

Thus presenting it selfe.

IT was an vpright Flat-square, (for it contained fiftie foote in the perpendicular, *Fanchurch.* and fiftie foote in the Ground-lyne) the vpper rooffe thereof (one distinct *Grices*) bore vp the true modell of all the notable Houses, Turrets, and Steeples, within the Citie. The Gate vnder which his Maiestie did passe, was 12. foote wide, and 18. foote hie : A Posterne likewise (at one side of it) being foure foote wide, and 8. foote in heigth : On either side of the Gate, stood a great French Terme, of stone, aduanced vpon wodden Pedestalls ; two half Pilasters of Rustick, standing ouer their heads. I could shoote more Arrowes at this marke, and teach you without the Carpenters Rule how to measure all the proportions

through the City of London. 279

belonging to this *Fabrick*. But an excellent hand being at this instant curiously describing all the seuen, and bestowing on them their faire prospectiue limmes, your eye shall hereafter rather be delighted in beholding those Pictures, than now be wearied in looking vpon mine.



☛ The Perfonages (as well Mutes
as Speakers) in this Pageant, were
theſe: viz.

1 **T**He higheſt Perſon was *The Brittainy Monarchy.*

2 At her feet, ſate *Diuine Wiſdome.*

3 Beneath her, ſtood *The Genius of the City*, A man.

4 At his right hand was placed a Perſonage, figuring,
The Counſell of the City.

5 Vnder all theſe lay a perſon repreſenting *Thameſis the River.*

Sixe other perſons (being daughters to *Genius*) were aduanced aboue him, on a ſpredding *Aſcent*, of which the firſt was,

1 *Gladneſſe.*

2 The ſecond, *Veneration.*

3 The third, *Promptitude.*

4 The fourth, *Vigilance.*

5 The fiſt, *Louing affection.*

6 The ſixth, *Vnanimity.*

Of all which perſonages, *Genius* and *Thameſis* were the only Speakers: *Thameſis* being preſented by one of the children of her Maieſties Reuels: *Genius* by M. *Allin* (ſeruant to the young Prince) his gratulatory ſpeech (which was deliuered with excellent Action, and a well tun'de audible voyce) being to this effect:

That London may be proud to behold this day, and therefore in name of the Lord *Maior* and *Aldermen*, the *Councell*, *Commoners* and *Multitude*, the heartieſt Welcome is tendered to his Maieſty, that euer was beſtowed on any King, &c.

The Which Banquet being taken away with
Wayts & found of Muſicke, there, ready for the pur-
*Hault-*poſe, his Maieſtie made his entrance into this
boyes of his Court Royall: vnder this firſt Gate, vpon
London.

the Battlements of the worke, in great Capitalls was inscribed, thus :

L O N D I N I V M.

And vnder that, in a smaller (but not different) *Caracter*, was written,

C A M E R A R E G I A :
The Kings Chamber.

Too short a time (in their opinions that were glewed there together so many houres, to behold him) did his Maiestie dwell vpon this first place : yet too long it seemed to other happy Spirits, that higher vp in these *Elisian* fields awaited for his presence : he sets on therefore (like the Sunne in his *Zodiaque*) bountifully disperfing his beames amongst particular Nations : the brightnesse and warmth of which, was now spent first vpon the *Italians*, & next vpon the *Belgians* : The space of ground, on which their *magnificent Arches* were builded, being not vnworthy to beare the name of the great Hall to this our Court Royal : wherein was to be heard & seene the fundry languages & habits of Strangers, which vnder Princes Roofes tender excellent harmony.

In a paire of Scales doe I weigh these two Nations, and finde them (neither in hearty loue to his Maiestie, in aduancement of the Cities honor, nor in forwardnesse to glorifie these *Triumphes*) to differ one graine.

To dispute which haue done best, were to doubt that one had done well. Call their inuentions therefore *Twynnes* : or if they themselues doe not like that name, (for happily they are emulous of one glory) yet thus may we speake of them.

————— *Facies non omnibus una,
Nec diuersa tamen, Qualem decet esse fororum.* *Ouid.*

282 *The Kings Entertainment*

Because, whosoever (*fixis oculis*) beholds their proportions,

viz. Expleri mentem nequit, ardescitq; tuendo.

The street, vpon whose breast, this *Italian* ^{*Gracious*} Jewell was worne, was neuer worthy of that ^{*Arrest*} name which it carries, till this houre: For here did the Kings eye meete a second Obiect, that inticed him by tarrying to giue honor to the place. And thus did the quaintnesse of the *Engine* seeme to discouer it selfe before him.

The Italians Pageant.

THE building tooke vp the whole bredth of the Street, of which, the lower part was a Square, garnished with foure great Columnes : In the midst of of which Square, was cut out a fayre and spacious high Gate, arched, being twenty seuen foot in the perpendicular lyne, and eyghteene at the ground lyne : ouer the Gate, in golden Characters, these verses (in a long square) were inscribed :

*Tu Regere Imperio populos Iacobe memento,
Hæ tibi erunt Artes, Paciq; imponere morem,
Parcere Subiectis, & debellare superbos.*

And directly aboue this, was aduanc'd the Armes of the Kingdome, the Supporters fairely cut out to the life : [ouer the Lyon (some prety distance from it) was written,

IACOBO REGI MAGN.

And aboue the head of the *Vnicorne*, at the like distance, this,

HENRICI VII ABNEP.

In a large Square erected aboue all these, King *Henry* the seuenth was royally seated in his Imperiall Robes, to whome King *James* (mounted on horsebacke) approches, and receyues a Scepter, ouer both their heads these words being written,

HIC VIR, HIC EST.

Betweene two of the *Columnes*, (on the right hand) was fixed vp a Square table, wherein, in liuely and excellent colours, was lim'd a woman, figuring *Peace*, her head securely leaning on her left hand, her body modestly bestowed (to the length) vpon the earth : In her other hand, was held an *Oliue* branch, the *Ensigne* of Peace, her word was out of *Virgil*, being thus,

284 *The Kings Entertainment*

———— *Deus nobis haec otia fecit.*

Beneath that peece, was another square Table, reaching almost to the Bases of the two *Columns*: In which, 2. (seeming) Sea personages, were drawne to the life, both of them lying, or rather leaning on the bosome of the earth, naked; the one a woman, her backe onely scene; the other a man, his hand stretch- ing and fastning it selfe vpon her shoulder: the word that this dead body spake, was this,

I Dext. I Nistrum.

Vpon the left-hand side of the Gate, betweene the other two *Columns*, were also two square Tables: In the one of which were two persons portrayed to the life, naked, and wilde in lookes, the word,

Expectate solo Trinobanti.

And ouer that, in another square, carying the same proportion, stood a woman vpriht, holding in her hand a Shield, beneath whom was inscribed in golden *Caracters*,

———— *Spes ô fidissima rerum.*

And this was the shape and front of the first great *Square*, whose top being flat, was garnished with *Pelasters*, and vpon the rooofe was directed a great *Padeslall*, on which stood a Person carued out to the life (a woman) her left hand leaning on a sword, with the poynt downward, and her right hand reaching forth a Diadem, which shee seemde by bowing of her knee and head, to bestow vpon his Maiestie.

On the foure corners of this vpper part, stood foure naked portraytures (in great) with artificall Trumpets in their hands.

In the Arch of the Gate, was drawne (at one side) a companie of Palme trees, young, and as it were but newly springing, ouer whose branches, two naked winged Angels, flying, held forth a Scroll, which seem'd to speake thus,

Spes altera.

On the contrarie side, was a Vine, spreading it selfe into many branches, and winding about *Oliue*, and

Palme trees : two naked winged Angels hanging likewise in the Ayre ouer them, and holding a Scrol betweene them, fild with this inscription,

*Vxor tua, sicut vitis abundans,
Et filii tui, sicut palmites Oliuarum.*

If your imaginations (after the beholding of these obiects) will suppose, that his Maiestie is now gone to the other side of this *Italian Trophée*; doe but cast your eyes backe, and there you shall finde iust the same proportions, which the fore-part, or Brest of our Arch carrieth, with equall number of *Columnes*, *Pedestals*, *Pilasters*, *Lim'd peeces*, and *Carued Statues*. Ouer the Gate, this *Distichon* presents it selfe.

*Nonne tuo Imperio satis est Iacobe potiri ?
Imperium in Musas, Aemule quaris ? Habes.*

Vnder which verses, a wreath of *Lawrell* seem'd to be ready to be let fall on his Maiesties head, as hee went vnder it, being held betweene two naked Antique women, their bodies stretching (at the full length) to compasse ouer the Arch of the Gate. And aboue those verses, in a faire Azure table, this inscription was aduanc'd in golden *Capitals*:

EXPECTATIONI ORBIS TERRARVM,
REGIB. GENITO NVMEROSISS.
REGVM GENITORI FÆLICISS.
REGI MARTIGENARVM AVGVSTISS.
REGI MVSARVM GLORIOSISS.

Itali statuerunt lætitiæ & cultus Signum.

On the right hand of this backe-part, betweene two of the *Columnes* was a square table, in which was drawne a Woman, crown'd with beautifull and fresh flowres, a *Caduceus* in her hand: All the notes of a plenteous and liuely Spring being caried about her, the soule that gaue life to this speaking picture, was:

——— *Omnis feret omnia Tellus.*

286 *The Kings Entertainment*

Above this peece, in another square, was portrayed
a *Tryton*, his Trumpet at his mouth, seeming to vter
this much,

Dum Cælum stellas.

Vpon the left hand of this back-part, in most excellent colours, Antikely attir'd, flood the 4. kingdoms, *England, Scotland, France* and *Ireland*, holding hands together ; this being the language of them all,

Concordes stabili Fatorum Numine.

The middle great Square, that was aduanced ouer the *Freese* of the Gate, held *Apollo*, with all his Ensignes and properties belonging vnto him, as a *Sphere*, *Bookes*, a *Caduceus*, an *Octaedron*, with other *Geometricall* Bodies, and a Harpe in his left hand : his right hand with a golden Wand in it, poynting to the battel of *Lepanto* fought by the *Turks*, (of which his Maiestie hath written a *Poem*) and to doe him Honour, *Apollo* himselfe doth here seeme to take vpon him to describe : his word,

Fortunate Puer.

These were the Mutes, and properties that helpt to furnish out this great *Italian Theater* : vpon whose Stage, the sound of no voice was appointed to be heard, but of one, (and that, in the prefence of the *Italians* themselues) who in two little opposite galleries vnder & within the Arch of the gate, very richly and neatly hung, deliuered thus much Latine to his Maiestie :

The Italians speach.

Salue, Rex magne, salue. Salutem Maiestati tuæ Itali, felicissimum Aduentum læti, felices sub Te futuri, precamur. Ecce hæc Omnes, Exigui munere, pauculi Numero: Sed magni erga Maiestatem tuam animi, multi obsequij. At nec Atlas, qui Cælum sustinet, nec ipsa Cæli conuexa, altitudinem attingant meritum Regis optimi; Hoc est, eius, quem de Teipso expressisti doctissimo (Deus I) et admirabili penicillo: Beatissimos populos, ubi & Philosophus regnat, & Rex Philosophatur. Salue, Rex nobilissime, salue, viue, Rex potentissime, feliciter. Regna, Rex sapientissime, feliciter, Itali optamus omnes, Itali clamamus omnes: Omnes, omnes.

Having hoysted vp our Sailes, and taken leane of this *Italian* shore, let our next place of casting anker, be vpon the Land of the 17. Prouinces; where the *Belgians*, (attired in the costly habits of their own natue Countrey, without the fantasticke mixtures of other Nations) but more richly furnished with loue, stand ready to receyue his Maiestie: who (according to their expectation) does most gratiouly make himselfe & his Royall traine their Princely ghests. The house which these *Strangers* haue builded to entertaine him in, is thus contriu'de.

The Pageant of the Dutch-men,
by the Royall Exchange.

THE Foundation of this, was (as it were by *Fate*) layd neere vnto a royall place ; for it was a royall and magnificent labour: It was bounded in with the houses on both sides the street, so proudly (as all the rest also did) did this extend her body in breadth. The passage of State, was a Gate, large, ascending eightene foot high, aptly proportion'd to the other lymmes, and twelue foot wyde, arched ; two lesser Posternes were for common feet, cut out and open'd on the sides of the other.

Within a small *Freeze*, (and kissing the very forehead of the Gate) the *Aedifice* spake thus,

Vnicus à Fato furgo non Degener Haeres.

Whil't lifting vp your eye to an vpper larger *Freeze*, you may there be enriched with these golden Capitalls,

IACOBO, ANGL. SCOT. FRANC. HIBERN.
REGI OPT. PRINC. MAX. BELGAE ded.

But bestowing your sight vpon a large Azure Table, lyned quite through with Characters of gold, likewise you may for your paynes receiue this inscription,

ORBIS RESTITVTOR. PACIS FVND. RELIG.
PROPVG. D. IAC. P. F. REGI. P. P.

D. ANNAE REGIAE CONIVG. SOR. FIL.
NEPTI, ET D. HENRICO I. FIL. PRINC.
IVVENT.

IN PVBL. VRBIS ET ORBIS LAETITIA,
SECVLIQVE FAELICITAT. XVII. BELGIAE
PROV. MERCATORES BENIGNE REGIA
HAC IN VRBE EXCEPTI, ET

S. M. VESTRAE OB ANTIQ. SOCIALE FOE-
DVS, ET D. ELIZ. BENEFICENT. DEVOTI.

FAVSTA OMNIA ET FOELICIA AD IMPERII
ÆTERNITAT. PRECANTVR.

Above which (being the heart of the *Trophee*) was a spacious square roome, left open, Silke Curtaines drawne before it, which (vpon the approach of his Maiestie) being put by, 17. yong *Damsels*, (all of them sumptuously adorned, after their countrey fashion,) fate as it were in so many Chaires of State, and figuring in their persons, the 17. *Provinces of Belgia*, of which euery one caried in a Scutchion (excellently pencilde) the Armes and Coate of one.

Above the vpper edge of this large Square Roome, and ouer the first Battlement, in another front, aduanc'd for the purpose, a square Table was fastened vpright, in which was drawne the liuely picture of the *King*, in his Imperial Robes; a Crowne on his head, the Sword and Scepter in his handes: vpon his left side stood a woman, her face fixed vpon his, a burning hart in her right hand, her left hanging by, a *Heron* standing close vnto her: vpon his other side stood vpright (with her countenance directed likewise vpon him) another woman, winged, and in a *Freeze* beneath them, which tooke vp the full length of this Square: this inscription set out it selfe in golden wordes:

— *Vtroque Satellite Tutus.*

Suffer your eyes to be wearied no longer with gazing vp so high at those *Sun-beams*, but turne the aside to looke below through the little *Posternes*: whose State sweld quickly vp to a greatnes, by reason of 2. *Columnes*, that supported them on either side. In a Table, ouer the right-hand *Portall*, was in perfect colours, drawne a Serpēt, pursued by a Lion: betweene them, Adders and Snakes, chafing one another, the Lion scornfully casting his head backe, to behold the violence of a blacke storme, that heauen powred

290 *The Kings Entertainment*

downe, to ouertake them: the found that came from all this, was thus :

— *Sequitur grauis Ira feroces.*

The opposite body to this (on the other side, and directly ouer the other *Portall*, whose pompe did in like maner leane vpon, and vphold it selfe by two mayne *Columnes*) was a square peece, in which were to be seene, Sheepe browsing, Lambes nibbling, Byrds flying in the Ayre, with other arguments of a ferene and vntroubled season, whose happineffe was proclaymed in this maner,

— *Venit alma Cicuribus Aura.*

Directly aboue this, in a square Table, were portrayed two *Kings*, reuerently and antiquely attyrd, who seem'd to walke vpon these golden lines,

*Nascitur in nostro Regum par Nobile Rege
Alter Iesiades, Alter Amoniades.*

From whome, leade but your eye, in a straight line, to the other side, (ouer the contrary Posterne) and there in a second vpper Picture, you may meete with two other *Kings*, not fully so antique, but as rich in their Ornaments ; both of them, out of golden letters, composing these wordes,

*Lucius ante alios, Edwardus, & inde I A C O B V S
Sextus, & hic fanxit, sextus & ille fidem.*

And these were the *Nerues*, by which this great *Triumphall* Body was knit together, in the inferiour parts of it, vpon the shoulders whereof, (which were garnished with rowes of *Pilasters*, that supported Lions, rampant, bearing vp Banners) there stood another lesser Square, the head of which wore a Coronet of *Pilasters*

also ; and about the, upon a *Pedestal*, curiously closed in between the tails of two Dolphins, was advanced a Woman, holding in one hand, a golden Warder, and pointing with the fore-finger of the other hand up to heaven. She figur'd *Diuine Providence*, for so at her feet was written.

Prouida Mens Cæli.

Somewhat beneath which, was to be seen an Imperial Crown, two Scepters being fastened (cross-wise) unto it, and deliuering this speech,

—*Sceptra hæc concedidit vni.*

At the elbows of this upper Square, stood upon the four corners of a great *Pedestall*, four *Pyramides*, hollow, and so neatly contriu'de, that in the night time (for anger that the Sunne would no longer looke upon these earthly beauties) they gaue light to themselves, and the whole place about them : the windowes, from whence these artificiall beames were throwne, being cut out in such a fashion, that (as *Ouid*, describing the Palace of the Sunne, sayes)

Clara micante Auro, Flammæq; imitante Pyropo,

So did they shine as farre off, like Crysolites, and sparkled like Carbuncles : Betweene those two *Pyramides* that were lifted up on the right hand, stood *Fortitude* ; her Piller resting it selfe upon this golden line,

Perfero curarum pondus, Discrimina temno.

Betweene the two *Pyramides* on the other side, Iustice challenged her place, being knowne both by her habit and by her voyce, that spake thus,

Auspice me Dextra solium Regale perennat.

Wee haue held his Maieftie too long from entring this third Gate of his *Court Royall*; It is now hie time, that thofe eyes, which on the other fide ake with rolling vp and downe for his gladfome prefence, fhould inioy that happineffe. Beholde, hee is in an inftance paffed thorough; The Obiects that there offer themfelues before him, being thefe:

Our *Belgick Statue* of Triumph, weares on her backe, as much riches, as ſhe caried vpon her breft, being altogether as glorious in *Columnes*, ſtanding on Tip-toe, on as loftie and as proude *Pyramides*; her walkes encompa'ft with as ſtrong and as neate *Pilaſters*: the colours of her garments are as bright, her adornements as many: For,

In the ſquare Field, next and loweſt, ouer one of the Portals, were the Dutch Countrey people, toying at their Husbandrie; women carding of their Hemp, the men beating it, ſuch excellent Art being expreſt in their faces, their ſtoopings, bendings, ſweatings, &c. that nothing is wanting in them but life (which no colours can giue) to make them bee thought more than the works of Paynters.

Lift vp your eyes a little aboue them, and beholde their *Exchange*; the countenaunces of the Marchants there being ſo liuely, that bargaines ſeeme to come from their lippes.

But in ſtead of other ſpeech, this is onely to bee had,

P I O I N V I C T O,
R. I A C O B O,

QVOD FEL. EIVS AVSPICIIS VNIVERSVM
BRIT. IMPERIVM PACAT, MARE TVTVM
PORTVS APERIT.

Ouer the other Portall, in a ſquare (proportion'd, to the bignes of thoſe other) men, women, & childrē (in Dutch habits) are buſie at other workes: the men

Weaving, the women Spinning, the children at their Hand-loomes, &c. About whose heads, you may with little labour, walke into the *Mart*, where as well as the *Free*, as the *Burger*, are buying and selling, the praise of whose industrie (being worthy of it) stands published in gold, thus,

QVOD MVTVIS COMMERCIIIS, ET ARTIFICVM NAVTARVMQVE SOLERTIA CRES-CAT, DESIDIA EXVLAT, MVTVAQVE AMI-CITIA CONSERVETVR.

Iust in the midst of these foure Squares, and directly ouer the Gate, in a large Table, whose feete are fastned to the *Freeze*, is their fishing & shipping liuely and sweetely set downe: The *Skipper* (euen though he be had tugging at his Net) loudly singing this:

*Quod Celeb: hoc Emporium prudenti industria suos,
Quouis Terrarum Negotiatores emittat, exteros
Humaniter admittat, foris famam, domi diuitias augeat.*

Let vs now clime vp to the vpper battlementes: where, at the right hand *Time* standes: at the left (in a direct line) his daughter *Truth*; vnder her foote is written,
Sincera.
And vnder his,

Durant.

Sincera Durant.

In the midst of these two, three other persons are ranked together, *Art*, *Sedulitie*, and *Labour*: beneath whom, in a *Freeze* rowing along the whole breadth of that Square, you may find these wordes in gold.

Artes, Perfecit, Sedulitate, Labor.

As on the forefide, so on this, and equall in heighth

294 *The Kings Entertainment*

to that of *Divine Providence*, is the figure of a Woman aduanced : beneath whom, is an imperiall Crowne, with branches of Oliue, fixed (crosse-wise) vnto it, and giues you this word.

Sine Cæde at Sanguine.

And thus haue we bestowed vpon you, all the dead Culloers of this Picture, (wherein notwithstanding, was left so much life) as can come from Art. The speaking instrument, was a Boy, attyred all in white Silke, a wreath of Lawrell about his temples : from his voyce came this found.

Sermo ad Regem.

Q *Væ tot Sceptra tenes forti, Rex maxime, dextra,
Prouida Mens summi Numinis illa dedit.
Aspice ridentem per gaudia Plebis Olympum,
Reddentem et plausus ad sua verba suos,
Tantus honos paucis, primi post secula mundi
Obtigit, et paucis tantum vnus incubuit,
Nam Regere imperijs populum felicibus vnum,
Arduares, magnis res tamen apta viris.
At non vnanimes nutu compefcere gentes,
Non homines pensum, sed labor ille Dei,
Ille idè ingentes qui temperet orbis habenas,
Adiungit longas ad tua fræna manus.
Et menti de mente sua præluet, et Artem
Regnandi, regnum qui dedit illa, docet.
Crescentes varijs Cumulat virtutibus annos,
Quas inter pietas, culmina summa tenet.
Hac proauos reddis patriæ, qui barbara Gentis
Flexère inducfo Numine, corda fera.
Hac animos tractas rigidos, subigisq; rebelles,
Et leue perfuades quod trahis ipse iugum,*

*Illis fida comes terram indignata profanum,
Aut nunc te tanto Rege reuerſa Themis.
Aſſidat et robuſta ſoror, ingentibus auſis
Pro populo carum tradere prompta caput.
Quin et Regis amor, muſæ et dilectus Apollo,
Regali gaudent ſubdere pleſtra manu.
Aurea et ubertas ſolerti nata labore,
Exhibet aggeſtas Ruris et urbis opes.
Sunt hæc dona Poli, certa quæ prodita fama
Miratum ut veniat, venit uterq; ; polus.
Venimus et Belgæ, patrijs Gens exul ab oris
Quos ſouit tenero mater Eliza ſinu.
Matri ſacratum, Patri duplicamus amorem,
Poſcimus et ſimili poſſe fauore frui.
Sic Deum Panthæci tibi proferat alitis æuum,
Sceptra per Innumeros qui tibi tradit Auos.
Sic Regina tua pars altera, et altera proles,
Spes populi longum det, capiatq; ; decus.*

Whilſt the tongues of the *Strangers* were employed in extolling the gracious Aſpect of the King, and his Princely behauour towards them, his Maieſtie (by the quicknes of *Time*, and the earneſtneſſe of expectation, whoſe eyes ran a thouſand wayes to finde him) had won more ground, and was gotten ſo far as to *S. Mildreds Church* in the *Poulterie*: cloſe to the ſide of which, a Scaffold was erected; where (at the *Citties* coſt) to delight the Queene with her owne country Muſicke, nine Trumpets, and a Kettle Drum, did very ſprightly & aſtiuely ſound the *Daniſh march*: Whoſe cunning and quicke ſtops, by that time they had toucht the laſt Ladyes eare in the traine, behold, the *King* was aduaunced vp ſo hie as to *Cheapeſide*: into which place (if *Loue* himſelfe had entered, and ſeene ſo many gallant Gentlemen, ſo many Ladyes, and beautifull creatures, in whoſe eyes glaunces (mixt with modeſt lookes) ſeemed to daunce courtly Meaſures in their motion) he could not haue choſen, to haue giuen the Roome any other name, then, *The Preſence Chamber*.

296 : *The Kings Entertainment*

The stately entraunce into which, was a
Super lane. faire Gate in height 18. foote. In breadth
 12. The thicknesse of the passage vnder it, being 24.
 Two Posternes stood wide open on the two sides,
 either of them being 4. foote wide, and 8. foote high.
 The two Portals that ietted out before these Posternes,
 had their sides open foure seuerall wayes, and serued
 as Pedestalles (of Rusticke) to support two *Pyramides*,
 which stood vpon foure great Balles, and foure great
 Lions: the Pedestalles, Balles, and *Pyramides*, de-
 uowing in their full vpriht heighth, from the ground
 line to the top, iust 60. foote. But burying this Me-
 chanicke Body in scilence, let vs now take note in
 what fashion it stood attyred. Thus then it went ap-
 pareled.

The Device at

Soper-lane end.

VVithin a large Compartiment, mounted about the forehead of the Gate, ouer the Freeze, in Capitalles was inscribed this Title :

NOVA FÆLIX ARABIA.

Vnder that shape of *Arabia*, this Iland being figured : which two names of *New*, and *Happie*, the Countrey could by no merit in it selfe, challenge to be her due, but onely by meanes of that secret influence accompanying his Maiestie wherefoeuer hee goes, and working such effectes.

The most worthy personage aduanced in this place, was *Arabia Britannica*, a Woman, attyred all in White, a rich Mantle of Greene cast about her, an imperiall Crowne on her head, and a Scepter in one hand, a Mound in the other : vpon which she sadly leaned : a rich Veyle (vnder the Crowne) shadowing her eyes, by reason that her countenaunce (which till his Maiesties approach, could by no worldly obiekt be drawne to looks vp) was penfuely deiected : her ornamentes were markes of *Chastetie* and *Youth* : the Crowne, Mound, and Scepter, badges of Soueraigntie.

Directly vnder her in a Cant by her selfe, *Fame* stood vpright : A Woman in a Watchet Roabe, thickly set with open Eyes, and Tongues, a payre of large golden Winges at her backe, a Trumpet in her hand, a Mantle of fundry cullours trauerfing her body : all

298 *The Kings Entertainment*

these Enignes displaying but the propertie of her swiftnesse, and aptnesse to disperse Rumors.

In a Descent beneath her, being a spacious Concave roome, were exalted five Mounts, swelling vp with different ascensions; vpon which sate the five *Senses*, drooping: *Viz.*

- | | | |
|---|------------------|-----------|
| 1 | <i>Auditus,</i> | Hearing. |
| 2 | <i>Vifus,</i> | Sight. |
| 3 | <i>Tactus,</i> | Feeling. |
| 4 | <i>Olfactus.</i> | Smelling. |
| 5 | <i>Gustus.</i> | Taste. |

Appareled in Roabes of distinct cullours, proper to their natures; and holding Scutchions in their handes: vpon which were drawne Heroglyphicall bodyes, to expresse their qualities.

Some prettie distaunce from them (and as it were in the midst before them) an artificiall Lauer or Fount was erected, called the *Fount of Arate (Vertue.)* Sundry Pipes (like veines) branching from the body of it: the water receiuing libertie but from one place, and that very slowly.

At the foote of this Fount, two personages (in greater shapen then the rest) lay sleeping: vpon their brestes stucke their names, *Detrahtio, Obliuio*: The one holdes an open Cuppe; about whose brim, a wreath of curled Snakes were winding, intimating that whatsoeuer his lippes toucht, was poysoned: the other helde a blacke Cuppe couerd, in token of an enuious desire to drowne the worth and memorie of Noble persons.

Vpon an Ascent, on the right hand of these, stood the three *Charites* or *Graces*, hand in hand, attyred like three Sisters.

<i>Aglaia.</i>	{	<i>Figuring</i>	{	Brightnesse, or Maiestie.
<i>Thalia,</i>				Youthfulnes, or flourishing.
<i>Euphrosine,</i>				Chearfulnes, or gladnes.

They were all three Virgins : their countenaunces laboring to smother an innated sweetnes and chearefulnes, that appareled their cheekes ; yet hardly to be hid : their Garmentes were long Roabes of fundry coloures, hanging loose : the one had a Chaplet of fundry Flowers on her head, clustard heere and there with the Fruites of the earth. The seconde, a Garland of eares of Corne. The third, a wreath of Vine-branches, mixt with Grapes and Oliues.

Their haire hung downe ouer their shoulders loose, and of a bright cullour, for that *Epithite* is properly bestowed vpon them, by *Homer* in his Himne to *Apollo*.

PVLCHRICOMÆ CHARITES.

The Bright Hayrde Graces.

They helde in their handes pensild Shieldes : vpon the first, was drawne a Rose : on the second, 3. Dyce : on the third, a branch of Mirtle.

Figuring	{	<i>Pleasantnesse.</i>
		<i>Accord.</i>
		<i>Flourishing.</i>

In a direct line against them, floode the three *Howres*, to whom in this place we giue the names of *Loue*, *Iustice*, and *Peace* : they were attyred in loose Roabes of light cullours, paynted with Flowers : for so *Ouid* appparels them.

300 *The Kings Entertainment*

Commencunt pūis incūctis vestibus Hora.

Wings at their feete, expressing their swiftnesse,
becauke they are Lackies to the Sunne : *Iungere apud
Tygum melicinus imperat Horis. Ouid.*

Each of them helde two Goblets ; the one full of
Flowers (as Ensigne of the *Spring*,) the other full of
rypened Figges, the Cognifance of *Summer*.

Vpon the approach of his Maieftie (sad and folemn
Muficke hauing beaten the Ayre all the time of his
abfence, and now ceasing,) *Fame* fpeakes.

Fama.

Tune into Ice mine eye-balls, whilst the found
Flying through this brazen trumpet, may back rebound
To ftop *Fames* handred tongues, leauing them mute,
As in an vntoucht Bell, or ftringlefle Lute,
For *Virtues* Fount, which late ran deepe and cleare,
Drie, and melts all her body to a teare.
You *Graces* ! and you houres that each day runne
On the quicke errands of the golden Sunne,
O fay ! to *Virtues* Fount what has befell,
That thus her veines shrinke vp.

Charitas Hora.

Wee cannot tell.

Euphrosine.

Behold the five-folde guard of *Sence* which keeps
The sacred ftream, fit drooping : neere them fleepe
Two horred Monfters : *Fame* ! fummon each *Sence*,
To tell the caufe of this ftrange accidence.

Heereupon *Fame* founding her Trumpet ; *Arabia
Britannica*, lookes cheerefully vp, the fences are ftart

led : *Detraction* and *Obluion* throw off their iron slumber, busily bestowing all their powers to fill their cups at the Fount with their olde malicious intention to sucke it drie ; But a strange and heauenly musicke suddainly striking through their eares, which causing a wildnes and quicke motion in their lookes, drew them to light vpon the glorious presence of the King, they were suddainly thereby daunted and funke downe ; The Fount in the same moment of *Tyme*, flowing fresh and abundantly through feuerall pipes, with Milke, Wine, and Balme, whilst a person (figuring *Circumspetion*) that had watcht day and night, to giue note to the world of this blessed *Tyme*, which hee foresawe would happen, steps forth on a mounted Stage extended 30. foote in length from the maine building, to deliuer to his Maiestie the interpretation of this dumbe Mysterie.

This Presenter was a Boy, one of the Choristers, belonging to Paules.

His Speech.

Great Monarch of the West, whose glorious Stem,
Doth now support a triple Diadem,
Weying more thā that of thy grand Grandfire *Brute*,
Thou that maist make a King thy substitute,
And doest besides the Red-rose and the white,
With the rich flower of *France* thy garland dight,
Wearing about Kings now, or those of olde,
A double Crowne of Lawrell and of gold,
O let my voyce passe through thy royall eare,
And whisper thus much, that we figure here,
A new *Arabia*, in whose spiced nest
A *Phoenix* liu'd and died in the Sunnes brest,
Her losse, made sight, in teares to drowne her eyes,
The Eare grew deafe, Tastelike a sick-man lyes,
Finding no rellish : euery other Sence,
Forgot his office, worth and excellence,
Whereby this Fount of Vertue gan to freeze,

302 *The Kings Entertainment*

Threatned to be drunke by two enemies,
 Snakie *Detraction*, and *Obluion*,
 But at thy glorious prefence, both are gone,
 Thou being that sacred *Phoenix*, that doest rise,
 From th'ashes of the first : Beames from thine eyes
 So vertually shining, that they bring,
 To *Englands* new *Arabia*, a new Spring :
 For ioy whereof, Nymphes, Sences, Houres, & Fame,
 Eccho loud Hymnes to his imperiall name.

At the shutting vp of this Speech, his Maiestie (being readie to goe on,) did most gracioufflie feede the eyes of beholders with his prefence, till a Song was spent : which to a loude and excellent Musicke (composed of Violins & an other rare Artificiall Instrumēt, wherein besides fundrie feuerall sounds effus'd (all at one time) were also sensibly distinguisht the chirpings of birds, was by two Boyes (Choristers of Paules) deliuered in sweete and rauishing voyces.

Cant.

Troynouant is now no more a Citie :
 O great pittie ! is't not pittie ?
 And yet her Towers on tiptoe stand,
 Like Pageants built on Fairie land,
 And her Marble armes,
 Like to Magicke charmes,
 binde thoufands fast vnto her,
 That for her wealth & beauty daily wooe her,
 yet for all this, is't not pittie ?
Troynouant is now no more a Cittie.

2

Troynouant is now a Sommer Arbour,
 or the nest wherein doth harbour
 The Eagle, of all birds that flie,
 The Soueraigne, for his piercing eie

If you wisely marke,
Tis besides a Parke,
Where runnes (being newly borne)
With the fierce Lyon, the faire Vnicorne,
or else it is a wedding Hall,
Where foure great Kingdomes holde a Festiuall.

3

Troynouant is now a Bridall Chamber,
whose roofe is gold, floore is of Amber,
By vertue of that holy light,
That burnes in *Hymens* hand, more bright,
Than the siluer Moone,
or the Torch at Noone,
Harke what the Ecchoes say !
Brittaine till now nere kept a Holiday :
for *Ioue* dwels heere : And tis no pittie,
If *Troynouant* be now no more a Cittie.

Nor let the scrue of any wresting comment vpon
these words,

Troynouant is now no more a Citie.

Enforce the Authors inuention away frō his owne
cleare straight and harmelesse meaning : all the scope
of this fiction stretch onely to this point, that *London*
(to doo honour to this day, wherein springs vp all
her happines) beeing rauished with vnutterable ioyes,
makes no account (for the present) of her ancient title,
to be called a Citie, (because that during these try-
umphes, shee puts off her formall habite of Trade and
Commerce, treading euen Thrift it selfe vnder foote,
but now becomes a Reueller and a Courtier. So that,
albeit in the end of the first Stanza tis said,

*Yet for all this, is't not pittie
Troynouant is now no more a Cittie.*

Citie, wishing a golden Reigne vnto you, present your Greatnes with a little cup of gold.

At the end of the Oration three Cups of gold were giuen (in the name of the Lord Maior, and the whole Body of the Citie,) to his Maiestie, the young Prince, and the Queene.

All which but aboue all (being gifts of greater value) the loyall hearts of the Citizens, beeing louingly receaued; his Grace was (at least it was appointed he should haue beene) met on his way neere to the Crosse, by *Syluanus* drest vp in greene Iuie, a Cornet in his hand, being attended on by foure other *Syluans* in Iuie likewise, their bowes and quiuers hanging on their shoulders, and winde Instruments in their hands.

Vpon sight of his Maiestie, they make a stand, *Syluanus* breaking forth into this abrupt passion of ioy.

Syluanus.

Stay *Syluans*, and let the loudest voyce of Musicke proclayme it (euen as high as Heauen) that hee is come.

Alter Apollo redit, Nouus En, iam regnat Apollo.

Which acclamation of his was borne vp into the ayre, and there mingled with the breath of their musickall Instruments: whose sound beeing vanished to nothing, Thus goes our Speaker on.

Syluanus.

Most happie Prince, pardon me, that being meane in habite, and wilde in apparance, (for my richest liuorie is but leaues, and my stateliest dwelling but in the woodes,) thus rudely with piping *Syluanes*. I presume to intercept your royall passage. These are my walkes: yet stand I heere, not to cut off your way, but to giue it a full and a bounteous welcome, beeing a

306 *The Kings Entertainment*

Messenger sent from the Lady *Eirene* my Mistresse, to deliuer an errand to the best of all these Worthies, your royall selfe. Many Kingdomes hath the Lady fought out to abide in, but from them all, hath shee beene most charitably banished: not that her beautie did deserue such vnkindnes, but that (like the eye of Heauen) hers were too bright, and there were no Eagles breeding in those nests, that could truly beholde them.

At last heere she arined, *Desinie* subscribing to this Warrant, that none but this Land should be her Inheritance. In contempt of which happines, Enue shootes his impoisoned slings at her heart, but his Advers (being charmed) turne their dangerous heads vpon his owne bosome. Those that dwell far off, pine away with vexing to see her prosper, because all the acquaintance which they haue of her, is this, that they know there is such a goodly Creature as *Eirene*, in the world, yet her face they know not: whilst all those that heere sleepe vnder the warmth of her wings, adore her by the sacred & Coelestiall name of *Peace*, for number being (as her blessings are) infinite.

Her daughter *Euporia* (well knowne by the name of *Plentie*, is at this present with her, (being indeede neuer: from her side) vnder yonder Arbour they sit, which after the daughters name is called, *Hortus Euporiae* (*Plenties Bower*): Chast are they both, and both maydens in memorie of a Virgine, to whom they were nurse children: for whose sake (because they were bound to her for their life,) mee, haue they charged to lay at your imperiall feete, (being your hereditatie due) the tribute of their loue: And with it thus to say.

That they haue languished many heauie moneths for your prefence, which to them would haue beene, (& proud they are that it shall be so now,) of the same operation and influence, that the Sunne is to the spring, and the spring to the earth: hearing therefore what trebble preferment you haue bestowed vpon this

day, wherein besides the beames of a glorious Sunne, two other cleare and gracious starres shine cheerefullie on these her homely buildings : Into which (because no dutie should bee wanting) shee hath giuen leaue euen to Strangers, to bee Sharers in her happines, by suffering them to bid you likewise welcome. By mee (once hers now your vassaille,) shee entreates, and with a knee sinking lower than the ground on which you tread, doo I humbly execute her pleasure, that ere you passe further, you would deigne to walke into yonder Garden ; the *Hesperides* liue not there but the Muses, and the Muses no longer than vnder your protection. Thus farre am I sent to conduct you thither, prostrately begging this grace, (since I dare not, as beeing vnwoorthie, lackey by your royall side) in that yet these my greene Followers and my selfe may bee ioyfull fore-runners of your expected approach, away *Syluanus*.

And being (in this their returne) come neare to the Arbor, they gaue a signe with a short florish from all their Cornets, that his Maiestie was at hand : whose princely eye whilest it was delighting it selfe with the quaint obiect before it, a sweete pleasure likewise courted his eare in the shape of Musicke, sent from the voyces of nine Boyes (all of them Queristers of Paules) who in that place presenting the nine Muses sang the dittie following to their Viols and other Instruments.

But, least leaping too bluntly into the midst of our Garden at first, we deface the beautie of it, let vs send you round about it, and suruey the Walles, Allies, and quarters of it as they lye in order.

This being the fashion of it.

The passages through it were two gates, arched and grated Arbor-wise, their heighth being 16. foote, their breadth 10. from the roofe, and so on the sides, downe to the ground, Cowcumbers, Pompions, Grapes,

and all other fruits growing in the land, hanging artificially in clusters : Betweene the two gates, a payre of flayres were mounted with some 20 assents : at the bottome of them (on two pillars) were fixed two Satiers carued out in wood ; the sides of both the gates, being strengthened with foure great French frames standing vpon pedestals, taking vp in their full height 20. foote.

The vpper part also caried the proportion, of an Arbor, being closde with their round tops, the midst whereof was exalted aboue the other two, *Fortune* standing on the top of it. The garnishments for the whole Bower, being Apples, Peares, Cheries, Grapes, Roses, Lillies, and all other both fruits and flowers most artificially molded to the life. The whole frame of this former banqueting house stood (at the ground line) vpon 4 foote ; the *Perpendicular* stretching it selfe to 45. Wee might (that day) haue called it, *The Musicke roome*, by reason of the chaunge of tunes, that danced round about it ; for in one place were heard a noyse of cornets, in a second, a comfort, the third, (which fate in fight) a set of Viols, to which the Muses sang.

The principall persons aduancde in this Bower, were, *Eirene* (*Peace*) and *Euporia* (*Plenty*) who fate together.

Eirene.

Peace: Was richly attired, her vpper garment of carnation, hanging loose, a Robe of White vnder it, powdred with Starres, and girt to her : her haire of a bright colour, long, and hanging at her back, but interwouen with white ribbands, and Iewels ; her browes were encompassed with a wreath compounded of the Oliue, the Lawrell, & the Date tree : In one hand shee held a *Caduceus*, (or *Mercuries* rod, the god of eloquence :) In the other, ripe eares of corne gilded : on her lap fate a Doue : All these being ensignes, and furnitures of *Peace*.

Euporie.

Plenty : Her daughter fate of the left hand, in changeable colours, a rich mantle of Gold trauesing her bodie : her haire large and loosely spreading ouer her shoulders : on her head a crowne of Poppy & Mustard feede ; the antique badges of *Fertilitie & Abundance*, In her right hand a *Cornucopia*, filde with flowers, fruits, &c.

Chrusos.

Directly vnder these, fate *Chrusos*, a perfon figuring Gold, his dressing, a tinsell Robe of the colour of Gold.

Argurion.

And close by him, *Argurion*, Siluer, all in white tinsell ; both of them crownde, and both their hands supporting a Globe, betweene them, in token that they commaunded ouer the world.

Pomona.

Pomona, the goddesse of garden fruits ; fate at the one side of Gold and Siluer ; attirde in greene, a wreath of frutages circling her temples : her armes naked : her haire beautifull, and long.

Ceres.

On the other side fate *Ceres*, crowned with ripened eares of Wheate, in a loose straw-coloured roabe.

In two large descents (a little belowe them) were placde at one end,

The nine Muses.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Clio.} \\ \textit{Euterpe.} \\ \textit{Thalia.} \\ \textit{Melpomene.} \\ \textit{Terpsicore.} \\ \textit{Erato.} \\ \textit{Polymnia.} \\ \textit{Vrania.} \\ \textit{Calliope.} \end{array} \right\}$	With muscall instruments in their hands, to which they sung all the day.	

At the other end.

The 7 liberall Artes.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Grammer.} \\ \textit{Logique.} \\ \textit{Rhetorique.} \\ \textit{Musicke.} \\ \textit{Arithmeticke.} \\ \textit{Geometry.} \\ \textit{Astrology.} \end{array} \right\}$	Holding shieldes in their hands, expresseing their feuerall offices.	

Vpon the verie vpper edge of a faire large Freeze, running quite along the full breadth of the Arbor, and iust at their feete were planted rankes of artificiall Artichocks and roses.

To describe what apparrell these Arts, and Muses wore, were a hard labour, and when it were done, all were but idle. Few Taylors know how to cut out their garments: they haue no Wardrob at all, not a Mercer, nor Merchant, though they can all write and read verie excellently well, will suffer them to bee great in their bookes. But (as in other countries) so in this of ours, they goe attirde in such thin clothes, that the winde euerie minute is readie to blowe through them: happy was it for them, that they tooke vp their lodging in a summer arbour, and that they had so much musicke to comfort them, their ioies (of which they do not euerie daie tast,) being notwithstanding now infinitelie multiplied, in this, that where before they might haue cryed out till they grew horse, & non would heare them, now they sing.

through the City of London. 311

Aderitque vocatus Apollo.

Chorus in full voices answering it thus.

*Ergo alacris Sylvas, & cætera rura voluptas
Panæque pastoresque tenet, Driadasque puellas,
Nec Lupus insidias pecori, nec retia Ceruis
Villa dolum meditantur, amat bonus otia Daphnis;
Ipsi lætitia voces ad sidera iactant
Intonsi montes: ipsæ iam carmina Rupes,
Ipsa sonant Arbuscula, Deus, Deus ille!*

Sylvanus (as you may perceiue by his office before) was but sent of an errand; there was another of a higher calling, a Trauailer, and one that had gon ouer much grownd, appointed to speake to his Maiesty, his name *Vertumnus*, the maister Gardner, and husband to *Pomona*: To tell you what cloathes hee had on his backe were to doo him wrong, for hee had (to say truth) but one suite: homelie it was, yet meete and fit for a Gardener: In steade of a hat, his browes were bound about with flowers, out of whose thicke heapes, here and there peeped a queene apple, a cherie, or a peare, this boon-grace hee made of purpose to keepe his face from heate, (because he desired to looke louelie) yet the sunne found him out, and by casting a continuall eye at him, whilst the old man was dressing his arbours, his cheekes grew tawnie, which colour for the better grace, he himselfe interpreted blushing. A white head he had, & sunne-burnt hands: in the one he held a weeding hooke, in the other a grafting knife: and this was the tenor of his speech. That he was bound to giue thanks to heauen, In that the arbour and trees which growing in that fruitfull Cynthian garden, began to droop and hang downe their greene heades, and to vncurl their crisped forlocks, as fearing and in some sort, feeling the sharpenesse of Autumnian malice, are now on the sudden by the deuine influence apparelled with a frefh and more liuely verdure than euer they were

316 *The Kings Entertainment*

publice, priuatimque erudiendae pueritiae praefuit, & hæc scholarum errata, cum aliquo etiam dolore suo, & passim, & sparsim deprehendit. Nostra hæc schola fundatorem Colletum hominem tam pium; tutores Merceros homines tam fidos consequuta, quam esset sælix, si placeret, Domino etiam Regi, quod Regibus Angliae, ad summam apud suos charitatem sæpius profuit, huic Merceroꝝ principi societati, fratrem se, & conciuem adscribere, Quantum huic vrbi ornamentum, quantum societati honestamentum, Quantum scholae nostræ emolumentum? Quantu setiam Regi ipsi honos inde accederet, mauult, qui hoc vult alias inter alia per otium Regi suo apperire, quam hodie cum tædio & præter arcam eidem explicare. Omnipotens Deus Iesus Christus & cum eo, ac per eum noster, et Pater, et Deus serenissimum Regem Iacobum, honoratissimam Regnam Annam, nobilissimum Principem Henricum, relinquamque Regiæ stirpis ad omnia summam natam sobolem diu nobis ita incolumes tueatur, vt cum huius vitæ secundissimum curriculum confeceritis, beatissimam vitæ celestis æternitatem consequamini. Dixi.



Our next Arch of triumph, was erected about the Conduit in Fleetstreete, into which (as into the long and beauteous gallery of the Citie) his Maiestie being entered ; a farre off (as if it had bene some swelling Promontory, or rather some enchanted Castle guarded by tenne thousand harmelesse spirits) did his eye encounter another Towre of Pleasure.

Presenting it selfe.

Fourescore and ten foote in height, and fiftie in breadth ; the gate twentie foote in the perpendicular line, and fourteene in the ground line : The two Posternes were answerable to these that are set downe before : ouer the posternes riz vp in proportionable measures, two turrets, with battlementes on the tops : The middest of the building was laid open to the world, and great reason it should be so, for the Globe of the world, was there seene to moue, being fild with all the degrees, and states that are in the land : and these were the mechanicall and dead limmes of this carued bodie. As touching those that had the vse of motion in it, and for a neede durst haue spoken, but that there was no stufte fit for their mouthes.

The principall and worthiest was *Astræa*, (*Iustice*) sitting aloft, as being newly descended from heauen, gloriously attired ; all her garments being thickly strewed with starres ; a crowne of starres on her head : a Siluer veile couering her eyes. Hauing tolde you that her name was *Iustice* ; I hope you will not put mee to describe what properties she held in her hands, fithence euery painted cloath can informe you.

Directly vnder her, in a Cant by her selfe, was *Arate* (vertue) inthrone, her garments white, her head crowned, and vnder her *Fortuna* : her foote

318 *The Kings Entertainment*

treading on the Globe, that moude beneath her : Intimating, that his Maiesties fortune, was about the world, but his vertues about his fortune.

Inuidia.

Envy, vnhandfomely attird all in blacke, her haire of the same colour, filleted about with snakes, stood in a darke and obscure place by her selfe, neere vnto *Vertue*, but making shew of a fearefulnesse to approach her and the light : yet still & anon, casting her eyes, sometimes to the one side beneath, where on seuerall Greeces fate the foure cardinall vertues :

Viz. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Iustitia.} \\ \textit{Fortitudo.} \\ \textit{Temperantia.} \\ \textit{Prudentia.} \end{array} \right\}$ In habiliments, fitting to their natures.

And sometimes throwing a distorted and repining countenance to the other opposite seate, on which, his Maiesties foure kingdomes were aduanced.

Viz. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{England.} \\ \textit{Scotland.} \\ \textit{France.} \\ \textit{Ireland.} \end{array} \right\}$

All of them, in rich Robes and Mantles ; crownes on their heads, and Scepters with pensild scutchions in their hands, lined with the coats of the particuler kingdomes : for very madnesse, that she beheld these glorious obiects, she stood feeding on the heads of Adders.

The foure Elements in proper shapes, (artificially and aptly expresseing their qualities) vpon the approach of his Maiestie, went round in a proportionable and euen circle, touching that cantele of the Globe, (which was open) to the full view of his Maiestie, which being

done, they bestowed themfelues in fuch comely order, and flood fo, as if the Eronie had beene held vp on the tops of their fingers.

Vpon diftinct Afcenfions, (neatly raifde within the hollow wombe of the Globe) were placed all the ftates of the land, from the Nobleman to the Ploughman, among whom there was not one word to bee heard, for you muft imagine as *Virgil* faith :

*Ægl. 4. Magnus ab integro feclorum nascitur ordo.
Iam redit at * virgo redeunt Saturnia regna.* Abstrus.

That it was now the golden world, in which there were few parts.

All the tongues that went in this place, was the tongue of *Zeale*, whose perfonage was put on by *W. Bourne*, one of the feruants to the young Prince.

And thus went his fpeech.

THE populous Globe of this our English Ile,
Seemde to mooue backward, at the funerall pile,
Of her dead female Maieftie. All ftates
From Nobles downe to fpirits of meaner Fates,
Mooude oppofite to Nature and to Peace,
As if thefe men had bin Th' Antipodes,
But fee, the vertue of a Regall eye,
Th' attraftiue wonder of mans Maieftie,
Our Globe is drawne in a right line agen,
And now appeare new faces, and new men.
The Elements, Earth, Water, Ayre, and Fire,
(Which euer clipt a naturall defire,
To combat each with other, being at firft,)
Created enemies to fight their worft,
See at the peacefull prefence of their King,
How quietly they moude, without their fting :
Earth not deuouring, Fire not defacing,

320 *The Kings Entertainment*

Water not drowning, & the Ayre not chafing :
But proping the queint Fabrick that heere stands,
Without the violence of their wrathfull hands.

Mirror of times, lo where thy *Fortune* sits,
Aboue the world, and all our humaine wits,
But thy hye Vertue aboue that: what pen,
Or Art, or braine can reach thy vertue then ?
At whose immortall brightnes and true light,
Enuies infectious eyes haue lost their sight,
Her fnakes (not daring to shoot-forth their slings
Gainst such a glorious obiekt) downe she slings
Their forkes of Venome into her owne mawe,
Whilst her ranke teeth the glittering poisons chawe,
For tis the property of *Enuies* blood,
To dry away at euery kingdomes good,
Especially when shee had eyes to view,
These foure maine vertues figurde all in you,
Iustice in causes, *Fortitude* gainst foes,
Temprance in spleene, and *Prudence* in all those,
And then so rich an Empyre, whose fayre brest,
Contaynes foure Kingdomes by your entrance blest
By *Brute* diuided, but by you alone,
All are againe vnited and made *One*,
Whose fruitfull glories shine so far and euen,
They touch not onely earth, but they kisse heauen,
From whence *Astræa* is descended hither,
Who with our last Queenes Spirit, fled vp thither,
Fore-knowing on the earth, she could not rest,
Till you had lockt her in your rightfull brest.
And therefore all Estates, whose proper Arts,
Liue by the breath of Majestie, had harts
Burning in holy Zeales immaculate fires,
With quenchles Ardors, and vnstaind desires,
To see what they now see, your powerful Grace,
Reflecting joyes on every subjects face.
These paynted flames and yellow burning Stripes,
Vpon this roab, being but as shoves and types,
Of that great Zeale. And therefore in the name
Of this glad Citie, whither no Prince euer came,

More lou'd, more long'd for, lowely I intreate,
You'd be to her as gracious as y' are great :
So with reuerberate shoutes our Globe shall ring,
The Muficks clofe being thus : God saue our King.

If there be any glorie to be won by writing these
lynes, I do freebie bestow it (as his due) on Tho. *Mid-*
dleton, in whose braine they were begotten, though
they were deliuered heere : *Quæ nos non fecimus ipsi,*
vix ea nostra voco.

But hauing peiced vp our wings now againe with
our owne feathers : suffer vs a while to be pruning
them, and to lay them smooth, whilst this song, which
went forth at the sound of Hault-boyes, and other
lowde instruments, flies along with the trayne.

Cant.

Where are all these Honors owing ?
Why are seas of people flowing ?
Tell mee, tell me Rumor,
Though it be thy Humor
More often to be lying,
Than from thy breath to haue trueth flying :
Yet alter, now that fashion,
And without the streame of passion,
Let thy voyce swim smooth and cleare,
When words want gilding, then they are most deere.
Behold where Ioue and all the States,
Of Heau'n, through Heau'ns seauen siluer gates,
All in glory riding
(Backs of Clouds bestriding)
The milky waie do couer,
Which starry Path being measur'd ouer,
The Deities conuent,
In Ioues high Court of Parliament.
Rumor thou doest loose thy aymes,
This is not Ioue, but One, as great, King JAMES.

And now take we our flight vp to Temple-bar, (the
Y

322 *The Kings Entertainment*

other ende of this our Gallery) where by this time, his Majestie is vpon the poynt of giuing a gracious and Princely Fare-well to the Lord Major, and the Citie. But that his eye meeting a seauenth beautifull obiect, is invited by that, to delay awhile his (lamented) departure.

The Building being fet out thus.

The Front or Surface of it was proportioned in euery respect like a Temple, being dedicated to *Ianus*, as by this inscription ouer the *Ianus* head may appear.

*Iano Quadri fronti
Sacrum.*

The height of the whole Aedifice, from the grownd line to the top, was 57. foote, the full bredth of it 18. foote : the thicknes of the Pafsage 12.

The perfonages that were in this Temple, *are these*.

1. The principall perfon, *Peace*.
2. By her flood, *Wealth*.
3. Beneath the feet of Peace, lay *Mars* (War) groueling.
4. And vpon her right hand (but with some little descent) was seated *Quiet*, the first hand-maid of *Peace*.
5. Shee had lying at her feete, *Tumult*.
6. On the other side was the seconde hand-mayd, *Libertie* at whose feete lay a Catte.
7. This perfon trod vpon *Seruitude*.
8. The third handmaid was *Safety*.
9. Beneath her was *Danger*,
10. The fourth attendant was, *Fælicitie* :
11. At her feete, *Vnhappines*.

Within the Temple was an Altar, to which, vpon the approch of the King, a *Flamin* appeares, and to him, the former Genius of the Citie.

The effect of whose speech was, that whereas the *Flamin* came to performe rites there, in honour of one *Anna* a goddesse of the *Romaines*, the Genius vowes, that none shall doe Sacrifice there, but himselfe, the offering that he makes being, the Heart of the Citie, &c.

And thus haue wee (lowely and aloofe), followed our Soueraigne through the seauen Triumphal gates of this his Court Royall, which name, as *London* receiued at the ryfing of the *Sunne*; so now at his going from her (euen in a moment) She lost that honour: And being (like an Actor on a Stage) stript out of her borrowed Majestie, she resignes her former shape & title of Citie; nor is it quite lost, considering it went along with him, to whom it is due: For such Vertue is begotten in Princes, that their verie presence hath power to turne a Village to a Citie, and to make a Citie appeare great as a Kingdome. Behold how glorious a Flower, Happinesse is, but how fading. The Minutes (that lackey at the heeles of *Time*) run not faster away then do our joyes. What tongue could haue exprest the raptures on which the soule of the Citie was carried beyond it selfe, for the space of manie houres? What wealth could haue allurde her to haue closde her eies, at the comming of her King, and yet See, her Bridegrome is but slept from her, and in a Minute (nay in shorter time, then a thought can be borne) is she made a Widdow. All her consolation being now, to repeate ouer by roate those Honors, which lately she had perfectly by hart: And to tell of those joyes, which but euen now, shee reallie behelde; yet thus of her absent, beloued, do I heare her gladly and heartily speaking.

*Infreta dum Fluvii Current: dum montibus umbra,
Lustrabunt Conuexa, Polus dum sidera pascit,
Virg. Semper Honos Nomenque tuum, Laudesque manebunt.*

The Pageant in the Strond.

THE Citie of *Westminster* and Dutchy of *Lancaster*, perceiuing what preparation their neighbor citie made to entertain her Soueraigne; though in greatnes they could not match her, yet in greatnes of Loue and Duetie, they gaue testimonie, that both were equall. And in token they were so, hands and hearts went together: and in the Strond, erected vp a Monument of their affection.

The Inuention was a Rayne-bowe, the Moone, Sunne, and the seauen Starres, called the *Pleiades*, being aduanced betweene two *Pyramides*: *Electra* (one of those seauen hanging in the aire, in figure of a Comet) was the speaker, her words carrying this effect.

That as his Majestie had left the Citie of London, happy, by deliuering it frō the noyse of tumult: so he would crowne this place with the like joyes; which being done, shee reckons vp a number of blessings, that will follow vpon it.

The worke of this was thought vpon, begun and made perfect in xij. daies.

As touching those fiue which the Citie builded, the *Arbor* in Cheap-side, and the Temple of *Ianus*, at Temple-bar, were both of them begun and finisht in fixe weekes. The rest were taken in hande, first in March last, after his Majestie was proclaymed, vpon which, at that time, they wrought till a Moneth after S. *James* his day following, and then gaue ouer by reason of the sicknes: At this second setting vpon the, fix weekes more were spent.

The Citie elected fixteene Comitties, to whom the Mannaging of the whole busines was absolutely referred: of which number, foure were Aldermen, the other graue Commoners.

through the City of London. 325

There were also Committies appoynted as Ouerfeers, and Serueyors of the workes.

*Artificum Operariumque in hoc tam
celebri apparatu, summa.
summa.*

THe Citie employed in the Framing, building, and setting vp of their five *Arches*, these officers and worke-men.

A Clarke that attended on the Committies.

Two officers that gaue Summons for their meetings. &c.

A clarke of the Workes.

Two master-Carpenters.

Painters.

Of which number, those that gaue the maine direction, and vndertooke for the whole busines, were only these feauen.

{	William Frisefield.
	George Mosse.
	Iohn Knight.
	Paul Ifacson.
	Samuell Goodrick.
	Richard Wood.
	George Heron.

Caruers.

24

Ouer whom, Stephen Harrifon Joyner was appoynted chiefe; who was the sole Inuentor of the Architecture, and from whom all directions, for so much as belonged to Caruing, Joyning, Molding, and all other worke in those five Pageants of the Citle (Paynting excepted) were set downe.

Ioyners.

80

Carpenters.

60

Turners.

6

Laborers to them.

6

Sawyers.

12

Laborers during all the time, and for the day of the Triumph.

70

326 *The Kings Entertainment.*

Befides these, there were other Artificers, As :
Plommers, Smythes, Molders.

To the Reader.

Reader, you must vnderstand, that a regard, being had that his Majestie should not be wearied with tedious speeches : A great part of those which are in this Booke set downe, were left vnspoken : So that thou dost here receiue them as they should haue been deliuered, not as they were. Some errours wander up and downe in these sheetes, vnder the Printers warrant : which notwithstanding may by thy authoritie be brought in, and receiue their due Correction.

FINIS.



NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

PAGE 1.

The Shoemakers Holiday.

On what authority is this play sometimes ascribed to Barten Holiday and to others? That Dekker was the author, even if Henslowe's testimony were wanting, is, as will be seen, abundantly proved by internal evidence.

The original edition of this comedy, as also that of *Old Fortunatus*, is printed in black letter.

PAGE 20.

where's Cissy Bumtrinket your maid?

The same term is used by Richard Brome in the Beggars' song, in the comedy of *The Jovial Crew*. Dekker also uses it in *Satiromastix* (p. 220).

PAGE 81.

The Comedie of Old Fortunatus.

Hazlitt says that this play "has the idle garrulity of age, with the freshness and gaiety of youth still upon its cheek and in its heart." The plan is founded on an old German romance, which was reprinted and translated a great many times during the sixteenth century. Dekker has preserved the original names and the main outline of the story.

PAGE 83.

Some call her Pandora.

From the evils Pandora is said to have brought on mortals, and the sense in consequence generally attached to her name, this seems a somewhat equivocal compliment; but Dekker alludes only to her name, which signifies *all-accomplished*, and

perhaps to the corresponding description of her in the "Theogony" of Hesiod. Gloriana, Cynthia, Belphoebe, and Astrea, were undoubtedly appellations applied to Elizabeth by the Poets of her time, although there is probably no other instance in which she is praised under the name of Pandora.

PAGE 87.

Patience is a vertue : would I were not vertuous, thats to say, not poore, but full of vice, (thats to say, full of chinckes) Ha, ha, so I am, for I am so full of chinckes, that a Horse with one eye may looke through and through me.

This is probably an allusion to a line found in Lyly's *Grammar* :

Effodiuntur opes, irritamenta malorum.

as by chinks, in the first instance, money is meant, and the holes in his dress in the second.

PAGE 89.

My tongue speakes no language but an Almond for Parrat, and cracke me this Nut.

It is somewhat difficult to affix any precise meaning to these phrases, which, however, occur not unfrequently in the writings of the time. There is a scarce black letter work named "An Almond for a Parrot;" and a play called "Crack me this Nut," was performed at the Rose Theatre in 1595. This latter is also one of the titles of a pamphlet of Lyly's.

PAGE 93.

Fortune her selfe is said to view thy fall.

We should probably read "fad" here instead of *said*.

PAGE 95.

If through Golds sacred hunger thou dost pine.

This is the *Auri sacra fames* of Virgil (see *Æn.* III. 57) ; the word "sacred" being of course used in the sense of accursed.

PAGE 95.

*a wiseman poore,
Is like a sacred booke thats neuer read,
To himselfe he liues, and to all els seemes dead.
This age thinks better of a gilded foole,
Then of a thredbare Saint in wisedomes schoole.*

Our poet may here allude to a passage in the Book of Ecclesi-

astes, ix. 14, sqq. "The poor man's wisdom is despised, and his words are not heard."

PAGE 96.

*thou wilt repent
That for the love of dross thou hast despised
Wisdomes divine embrace.*

It is evident that many of the sentiments in this scene were drawn by our poet from the choice made by Solomon in the beginning of his reign, of wisdom, in preference to riches, or honour, or power over his enemies, or length of life, as recorded in the First Book of Kings: and it should be remembered to their honour that many noble images and illustrations were derived from the same divine source by the dramatic poets of that age.

PAGE 96.

Gold is the strength, the sinewes of the world.

"No wonder," says Campbell, who quotes this Scene in his Specimens, "poor Dekker could rise a degree above the level of his ordinary genius in describing the blessings of Fortunatus's inexhaustible purse: he had probable felt but too keenly the force of what he expresses in the misanthropy of Ampedo,

"I'm not enamour'd of this painted idol," &c.

PAGE 97.

*yet I feele nothing here to make mee rich,
here's no sweete Muficke with her siluer found.*

"Music with her silver found" is a quotation from a poem by Richard Edwards, in *The Paradise of Dainty Devices*, 1576, 1597. The stanza containing these words is also quoted in *Romeo and Juliet*, towards the end of the fourth act. A similar expression "Musicke with her silver tongue" occurs again in the *Comedy of Old Fortunatus*. Dekker seems indeed to have had a special fondness for this phrase, for we read also in *Satiro-mastix*.

"Musicke talke lowder, that thy silver voice," &c.

PAGE 124.

Whether it were lead or latten that haspt downe those winking casements.

The word *latten*, which occurs in act 1. of *The Merry Wives of Windsor* has been differently explained by the commentators.

Theobald supposes it to have been the old orichalc; Malone that it was made of copper and calimini, and Steevens, who quotes the passage in the text, seems inclined to think it tin. Chancer says in *The Frankelins Tale*:

"And this was, as the bookes me remember,
The colde frosty felon of December.
Phebus waxe old and hewed like *laton*,
That in his hote declination
Shone as the burned gold with strems bright :
But now in Capricorne adoun he light,
When as he shone ful pale, I dare wel sain."

PAGE 125.

what shall we learne by trauaile

ANDEL. *Fashions.*

SHAD. *Thats a beafly diseafe.*

"Infected with the fashions" is one of the disorders of Petruccio's horse, as described by Biondello in act 3. of *Taming of the Shrew*. "It is so called in the West of England," says Grey, "but by the best writers on farriery, *farcens* or *farcy*." "Steevens, among other instances of its use by the old writers, adduces the passage in the text.

PAGE 125.

when my purfourskip ends, ile religne, and cap you.

Cap you, from the context, must mean, *take from you the cap*. In the *Knight of the Burning Pestle*, the host threatens to *cap* Ralph, unless his reckoning be immediately paid, which is resented by the honest citizen as an unpardonable indignity.

PAGE 129.

O Deformitie,

*Thy fairenes is not like to Agrippynes,
For (dead) her beantie will no beantie haue,
But thy face looks most louely in the graue.*

In the original the word in parenthesis is misprinted *dread*. For the very obvious correction made in the text I have the high authority of Charles Lamb, who says of the scene which these lines clofe :—"The humour of a frantic lover is here done to the life. Orleans is as passionate an inamorato as any which Shakespeare ever drew. He is just such another adept in love's reasons. He talks 'pure Biron and Romeo,' he is almost as

poetical as they, quite as philosophicall, only a little madder."
Specimens (1808) p. 62-63.

PAGE 133.

With fiftie bard Horses prawning at his heeles.

"Bard," i.e. barbed or adorned with trappings. So in Heywood's *Four Prentices of London* :

"Shall our bar'd horses climb yon mountain tops," &c.

PAGE 136.

la paayne Hispanola.

The pavan, which is here spoken of, is said in the *Alchemist* of Ben Jonson, to be a Spanish dance. It is also mentioned in the last scene of *Twelfth Night*. It seems to have been a majestic and stately dance, and is particularly described by Sir John Hawkins in a note on *Twelfth Night*.

PAGE 147.

But I in wildernesse tottred out my youth.

"Wildness" is probably the correct reading.

PAGE 151.

*The path that leades to Vertues court is narrow,
 Thorne and vp a hill, a bitter iorney,
 But being gon through, you find all heau'nly sweetes,
 The entrance is all flintie, but at th'end;
 To towers of pearle and cristall you ascend.*

One is irresistibly reminded in reading these fine lines of a similar passage in Tennyson's *Ode on the Death of the Duke of Wellington*.

PAGE 155.

whilst thou art commensing thy knauerie there, ile proceede Doctor Dodipoll here.

A comedy called "The Wisdom of Dr. Dodipoll," was printed in 1600: it is to this that Dekker alludes, as also in *Satiro-mastix*, p. 262, "Wut sweare by Parnaffus and lye too, Doctor Doddipol?"

PAGE 159.

to marke how like tree bul-beggara dey stand.

Bull-beggar and bull-bear were words of the same meaning as the modern *bug-bear*. Gable Harvey in his *Four Letters and certain Sonnets*, uses both. "He was proved a filly *bull-bear*; a very puff of wind; a thing of nothing." "Some odd wits for-

footh will needs be accounted terrible *bull-beggars*, and the only kill-cows of their age." See also Pierce's *Supererogation*.

PAGE 160.

Puts Gallowayes hornes off.

This stage-direction is evidently an error. For Galloway we should doubtless read Montrose and Longaville.

PAGE 175.

May still to fortie two, and one yeere more,

So the original ; but there is very little doubt we should read "add." As Elizabeth succeeded to the Crown only in November, 1558, and the present play was printed in 1600, it seems certain that she could not have reigned more than forty-two years.

PAGE 177.

SATIRO-MASTIX.

This play is an answer to Ben Jonson's *Poetaster*, which had been brought out at the Blackfriars by the children of the Queen's chapel in the previous year. Marston and Dekker had, it seems, persisted for some years in ridiculing Jonson on the stage, till he found it necessary to draw up the *Poetaster*, in which, together with the untrussing, the whipping, and the stinging, he anticipated and answered many of the accusations subsequently brought against him in the *Satiro-mastix*. As Marston and Dekker had headed the cabal against him, he introduced them under the respective names of Crispinus and Demetrius ; Marston is very distinctly marked : Dekker might, perhaps, have "sat still unquestioned"—at least with posterity—had not the justice of the satire filled him with rage, and induced him to appropriate the character of Demetrius to himself in an angry recrimination. He was (apparently to his own satisfaction) put forward by the rest as their defender. Jonson must have been aware of this, for he makes one of the players say of Dekker, "his doublet's a little decayed, otherwise he is a very simple honest fellow, sir, one Demetrius, a dresser of plays about the town here ; we have hired him to abuse Horace, and bring him in in a play."

Dekker, being both a rapid and a popular writer, the choice of a champion was not injudicious. The *Satiro-mastix* was produced in 1602. Jonson had played with his subject ; but Dekker writes in downright passion, and foams through every page. He makes no pretensions to invention, but takes up

the characters of his predecessor, turns them the *seamy side without*, and produces a coarse and ill-wrought caricature. Tucca who, in Jonson's hands, is amusing with all his insolence and rapacity, degenerates with Dekker into a mere candidate for Tyburn. Nor is this the worst. In transferring the scene from the court of Augustus to England, Dekker has the inconceivable folly to fix on William Rufus, a rude and ignorant soldier, whom he ridiculously terms "learning's true Mæcenas, poesy's king," for the champion of literature, when his brother, Henry I., who aspired to the reputation of a scholar, would have entered into his plot with equal facility.—GIFFORD, *Memoir of Ben Jonson*.

"William Rufus, 'learning's true Mæcenas, poesy's king,' it may be presumed, was the ignorant William Shakespeare, "skilled in the hawking and hunting languages;" so that Dekker's selection appears to have been peculiarly appropriate. The wits of Elizabeth were not asleep.

In this comedy Shakespeare is King William, and Lyly is Sir Vaughan ap Rees; the remark of Tucca, "be not so tart my precious Metheglin," identifies Lyly with Amorphus, reminding us of the Metheglin and Pythagorical breeches in *Cynthia's Revels*, which, I hold, are satirical allusions to the transmigrations through Sir Hugh Evans and Captain Fluellen; whilst in the remark, "you nasty Tortois, you and your itchy poetry break out like Christmas, but once a year," we have probably the germ of Caliban."

SHAKESPEARE AND JONSON. *Dramatic versus Wit-Combats*. Auxiliary Forces: Beaumont and Fletcher, Marston, Dekker, Chapman, and Webster. Lond.: J. Russell Smith, 1864, p. 52.

PAGE 179.

*Non pokes in Nugas dicere plura meas,
Ipse ego quam dixi.—Qui se mirantur, in illos
Virus habe: Nos hæc nouimus esse nihil.*

This is from Martial. Epig. lib. XIII. 2, *In Detractorem*.

PAGE 181.

Monstrum horrendum, informe: Ingens cui lumen ademptum.
Virgil, *Aen.* III, 658.

PAGE 183.

Populus me sibilat, at mihi plaudo.

Horace, *Satir.* lib. I. 1. 66.

SATIRO-MASTIX.

PAGE 184.

To this play the author prefixed a list of *Errata* (which have, of course, been corrected in the present edition), with the following address, *Ad Lectorem*: "In steed of the Trumpets sounding thrice, before the Play begin: it shall not be amiss (for him that will read) first to beholde this short Comedy of Errors, and where the greatest enter, to give them in steed of a hisse, a gentle correction."

PAGE 212.

these true heires of Ma. Justice Shallow.

The two plays of Shakespeare, in which the character here alluded to, appears—i. e., the Second Part of K. Henry IV. and The Merry Wives of Windsor—were brought out in 1600—1602. The allusion in the text seems to prove that the famous justice had already become a household word.

PAGE 214.

One word Sir Quintilian in hugger mugger.

In hugger-mugger—i. e., in private, secretly. The phrase occurs in *Hamlet*, Act iv. Sc. 5.

"we have done but greenly

In hugger-mugger t'inter him."

PAGE 216.

Mist'ris Miniuer caps.

This expression, which recurs frequently in the *Satiro-mastix*, is used by Simon Eyre as a term of reproach in *The Shoemakers Holiday* (*vide antea*, p. 72): "Vanish mother Mineuer-Cap, trip and goe."

PAGE 218.

Mother Mumblecruff.

This name, which is applied by Eyre to his wife in *The Shoemakers Holiday*, is given in *Ralph Roister Doister* to one of the principal characters: it is also used in the *Pleasant Comedy of Patient Griffell*, 1603.

PAGE 221.

Th'ast a breath as sweet as the Rose, that grows by the Bear-garden.

The proximity of the Hope, while yet a bear-garden to the

Rofe, may be gathered from the above paffage. The atmosphere at the Rofe was, it would feem, impregnated with the effluvia from the Hope. — *Collier*.

PAGE 229.

TUC. *Thou haft been at Parris Garden haft not?*

HOR. *Yes, Captaine, I ha plaide Zulsiman there.*

Paris Garden was at an early date employed as a theatre for dramatic representations, and it feems to have been of an hexagonal fhape. *Zulsiman* was a character in fome play which has not furvived.

PAGE 229.

My name's Hamlet reuenge.

This is the fecond allufion in *Satiro-maftix* to the writings of Shakefpeare. The earlieft known edition of Hamlet bears date 1603; but it feems to have been acted fome time before it found its way into print.

PAGE 231.

He tagge my Codpeece point with thy legs.

This expreffion occurs alfo in *The Shomakers Holiday* (*ſuprà*, p. 68): "My *Codpeece-point* is ready to flye in peeeces euery time I thinke vpon miſtris *Rofe*."

PAGE 251.

*Smiles on my cheekes ariſe,
To ſee how ſweetly a true virgin dyes.*

"The beauty and force of this ſcene," ſays Charles Lamb, "are much diminished to the reader of the entire play, when he comes to find that this ſolemn preparation is but a ſham contrivance of the father's, and the potion which Coeleſtina ſwallows nothing more than a ſleeping draught, from the effects of which ſhe is to awake in due time, to the ſurpriſe of her huſband, and the great mirth and edification of the king and his courtiers. As Hamlet ſays, they do but 'poifon in jeſt.' The ſentiments are worthy of a real martyrdom, and an Appian ſacrifice in earneſt." But as Terrill and his bride both believed the ſacrifice to be real, we cannot concur in theſe ſtrictures of the gentle Elia.

PAGE 257.

Saue thee, my moſt gracious King a Harts ſaue thee, all hats and caps are thine, and therefore I vaile: for but to thee great Sultane Soliman, &c.

Compare the final scenes of *The Shoemakers Holiday*, where Simon Eyre talks in much the same way to the King. "Sim Eyre knowes how to speake to a Pope, to *Sultan Solymen*, to *Tamberlaine*, and he were here." Both Eyre and Tucca ask of their Sovereign the boon of his presence to grace a banquet. The difference is that the *bonhomie* of the former is genuine and natural, and that of the latter assumed and artificial.

PAGE 265.

Epilogue.

In the Epilogue to Dekker's *Satiro-mastix*, Tucca addresses the audience generally as "*two penny tenants*," having previously told them, "I'll fee you all here for your two-pence a-piece again, before I'll lose your company," as if the price had been, for some reason, temporarily lowered to that rate. This play was performed before 1602, by the Lord Chamberlain's servants and by the Children of St. Pauls. In the body of it, Tucca speaks degradingly of "*penny-bench theatres*," where "*a gentleman or an honest citizen*" might sit "*with his squirrel by his side cracking nuts*;" which agrees with a passage in his *Gull's Horn-Book*, 1609, where he remarks, "your groundling and gallery; commoner buys his sport for a penny," as if the admission to the yard, where people stood, and to the gallery, where they sat, were the same.

PAGE 267.

The Magnificent Entertainment, &c.

With this is usually found at the end: B. JON: [Ben Jonson] *his Part of King James his Royall and Magnificent Entertainment through his Honorable Cittie of London, Thursday the 15 of March 1603.* So much as was presented in the first and last of their *Triumphall Arch's.* Printed at London by V. S. for Edward Blount, 1604.

Of Dekker's portion another edition exists, "Edinburgh, Printed by Thomas Finlason and are to be sauld at Niddries wynde heide. Anno Dom. 1604. with Licence."

PAGE 274.

*Where the neat Sunne each Morne him[s]elfe attires,
And gildes it with his repercussive fires.*

This is a word of very uncommon occurrence. It is used in Fanshawe's translation of the *Lusiad* :

"Whose *repercussive* lyre shall have the fate
To be renowned more than fortunate."

Dekker uses the word again in his Pageant of *Troia Nova Triumphans* (vol. III., p. 243).

PAGE 282.

Gracious-street.

See also *The Shoemakers Holiday*, p. 69: "the great new hall in Gracious streete corner." The present name, Gracechurch-street, is but little more correct than the corrupted appellation of Dekker's time. St. Bennet Grafs-church, at the south-west corner of Fenchurch-street, was so called from its vicinity to the Grafs-market, formerly held close by. The customs or duties of this market, in the reign of Edward III., are printed in Stow's *Survey*, ed. 1603, p. 214.

PAGE 290.

Alter Iesiades, alter Amoniades.

Jesiades, i.e., Solomon, the grandson of *Jesse*. It is almost needless to observe how much the King admired this agnomen, or how often it was attributed to him. In the Preface to his Works, by Bishop Montacute, we read "God hath given us a Solomon, and God above all things gave Solomon wisdom," &c. *Amoniades* probably signifies Apollo, the son of Jupiter (Ammon).

PAGE 293.

The Mart, where as well the Froe, as the Burger, are buying and selling.

Froe is the Dutch word for a woman. It is used by Beaumont and Fletcher in *Wit at Seven Weapons*, Act. V.

"Buxom as Bacchus' froes, revelling, dancing,
Telling the musick's numbers with their feet."

PAGE 294.

Sermo ad Regem.

Gifford is at a loss to know where Dekker got these Latin verses—"perhaps," he says, "from his own stores; for he had a smattering of Latin, which he is somewhat too fond of showing."

PAGE 297.

A woman in a watchet robe.

Watchet is a light blue-colour. The word is Saxon, and is used by Milton and Dryden.

PAGE 302.

Troynouant is now no more a Citie.

The name of *Troynouant* here given to London, and also in a Pageant by Dekker, entitled *Troia Nova Triumphans* (1612), is derived from the once popular fable of Geoffry of Monmouth, who declares that Brute, a lineal descendant of Æneas, "the grandson of Jupiter, by his daughter Venus, builded this citie about the year of the world 2885," (or 1008 years before the nativity of Christ), and named it Trinovantum, Troy-novant, (or New Troy), in remembrance of Troy, from whence he came, calling the country Britain after his own name.

PAGE 314.

One of maister Mulcasters Schollers.

Dr. Richard Mulcaster, then Master of St. Paul's School, "a native of Carlisle, was educated at Eton, whence he was sent to King's College, Cambridge, where he took the degree of B.A., 1553-4, but afterwards removed to Oxford, and was elected a Student of Christ Church; proceeded M.A. and became eminent for his skill in Greek. After spending more than five years at Oxford, he made so great a proficiency in several sorts of learning, that he was unanimously chosen master of the school erected in 1561 in the parish of St. Laurence, Pountney, by the Worshipful Company of Merchant-taylors of that City. In 1596 he succeeded one Joh. Harrison in the Chief Masterhip of St. Pauls School in London, and soon after had the rich parsonage of Stamford Rivers in Essex bestowed on him by Queen Elizabeth. He died there 15th April 1611, having resigned Paul's School three years before."—Wood's *Athenæ Oxonienses*.

PAGE 317.

I hope you will not put me to describe what properties shee held in her hands, sithence every painted cloath can informe you.

Properties, i.e., ensigns proper to her character—a theatrical term. *Sithence* is "since." *Painted cloth* was cloth or canvas painted in oil with a variety of devices and verses interspersed.

PAGE 318.

Scepters with pensild scutchions in their handes.

i.e. (not having *pensils*, small flags, but) painted; so in an earlier passage of this pageant: "They held in their handes pensild Shieldes; vpon the first was drawne a Rose," &c.

PAGE 318.

where, on feuerall greeces, sale the foure cardinall vertues.

This word, used in several places by Shakespeare, was variously spelt, *grice*, *greece*, *greefe*, *grieze*, *grize*, *grise*, &c.; and seems to be formed from *gressus*, or contracted from *degrees*. It signified a step, or a flight of steps. See Lydgate's *Warres of Troy* (ed. 1555):—

"She gan anone by *graces* to affende
Of a Touret in to an hie pynacle."

PAGE 318.

that cantle of the globe which was open to the full view of his Maiestie.

Cantle, or *cantel*, signifies portion, piece, or parcel.

"Cant," which occurs anteà p. 317:—"Directly vnder her in a Cant by herselfe" is a contraction of this, and means a niche or corner, like the Dutch *kant*, from which both words are probably derived.

PAGE 319.

And flood so, as if the Eronie had beene held vp on the tops of their fingers.

Qy. "ourany"? suggests Mr. Dyce (Notes to Middleton's Works, v. 209).



ADDITIONAL NOTES.

PAGE 181.

Horace *ha'd* his Poetafters to the Barre.

Alluding to the trial of the Poetafters, which takes place before Auguftus and his poetical jury of Virgil, Ovid, Tibullus, etc., in Ben Jonfon's play.

Id.

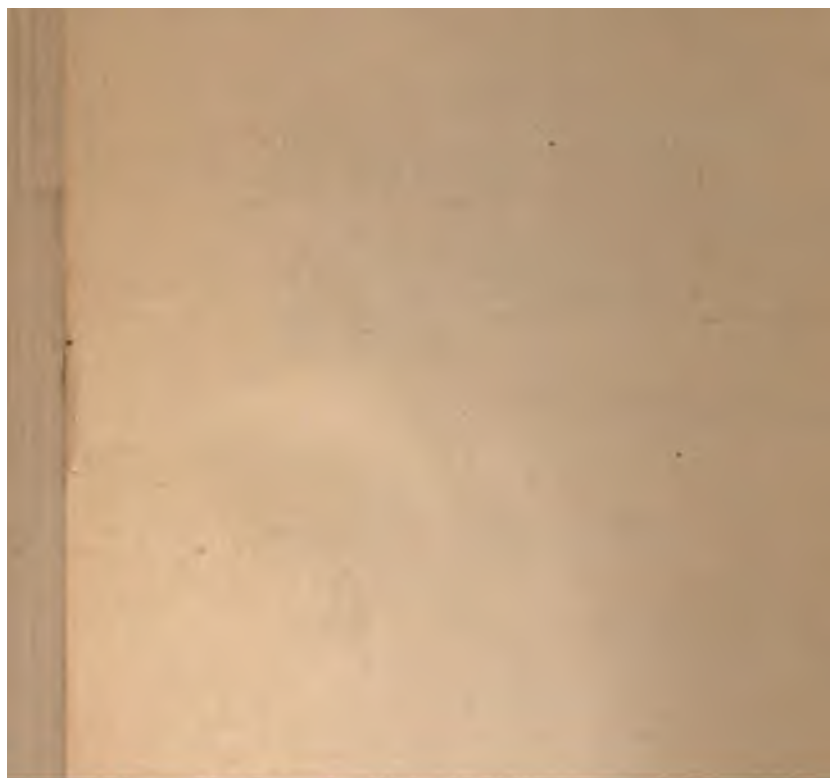
Horace *made himfelfe believe, that his* Burgonian wit *might* *deperately challenge all commers.*

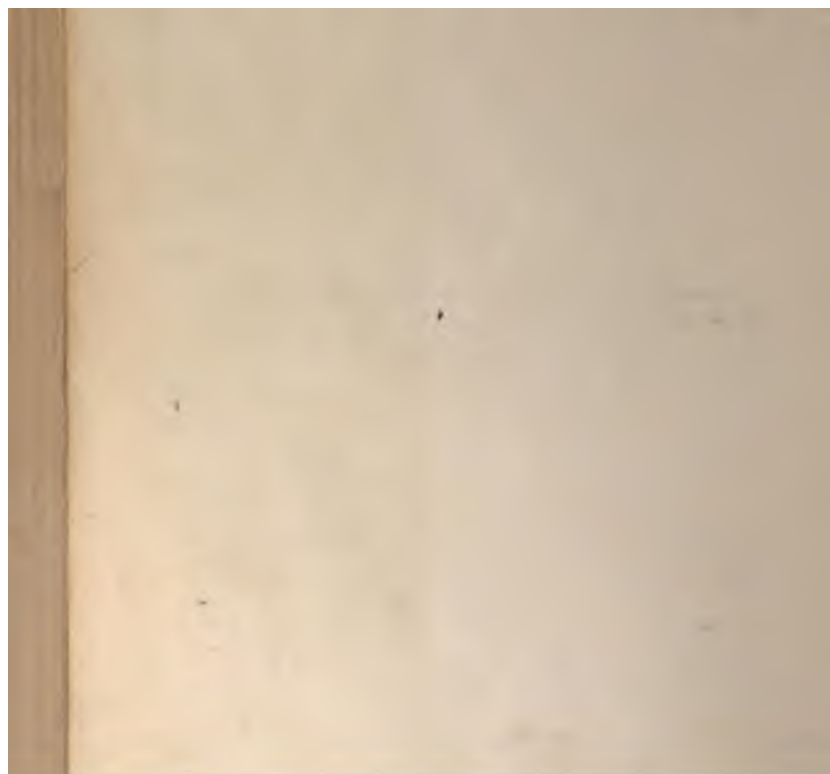
Dekker alludes here to the baftard of Burgundy, who confidered himfelf unmatched, till he was overthrown in Smithfield by Woodville Earl Rivers.

ERRATA.

PAGE	LINE
329	20 <i>for</i> probable, <i>read</i> probably.
339	6 <i>for</i> bonhonnice, <i>read</i> bonhomic.







Stanford University Libraries



3 6105 011 983 892

D321

Vol. 1

C.1

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(650) 723-9201

salcirc@sulmail.stanford.edu

All books are subject to recall.

DATE DUE

JAN 24 2001
JAN 2 2001
FEB

JAN 9 2001

